莫哥西亞多開示錄

-- 空、有為及無為

Dhamma Talks by Mogok Sayadaw

- Emptiness, Conditioned, and Unconditioned

第 16 部 (參考用譯文)

特別聲明:本參考用譯文疏漏、錯繆難免,讀者應慎思明 辨。僅供法友參考;並祈藉此拋磚引玉,眾法友能共襄盛 舉,共同圓滿此譯事。 Nanda 謹識。

目次

Part 16	5
Right Perception, Knowing and Viewing	5
正確的知覺、知見與觀察	
正確的感知、知曉與觀看	7
The Quickest Way to End Tanhā	
快速斷除渴愛之道	10
終結渴愛的捷徑	
The Importance of Spiritual Friend	
善五 善知識的重要性	
善知識的重要性	
Where Is Dukkha Coming from?	
苦從何來?	
苦從何來?	
The Greatest Enemy	
最巨大的敵人	
最大的敵人	
The Poisonous Tree	
毒樹	
毒樹	

Diṭṭhi and Apāyas	36
Some Reflections	37
邪見與惡趣(Diṭṭhi and Apāyas)	38
一些省思	41
邪見與惡趣 (錯誤的見解與苦難的存在)	42
The Paths of Action and Knowledge	
行與智之道	46
行為之道與智慧之道	48
With Little Pleasure And Too Much Dukkha	50
樂少而苦多	50
少樂多苦	52
Deceiving by The Mind	54
心之欺瞞	54
被心所欺騙	55
Contemplation of Mind	57
觀心	59
觀心	62
Happy with Dukkha	
愛上苦	66
樂於苦	
Differences between Khandha and Nibbāna	
五蘊與涅槃之差異	70
五蘊與涅槃之差異	
Making Decision with The Khandha	
以五蘊作抉擇	
以五蘊做決定	
Not for Chanting but for Practice	
非為誦唸,而為修行	
非為誦念,乃為實修	
Worthless and Worthy	
有價值與無價值	
無價值與有價值	
On the Hindrances	
關於五蓋	
關於障礙	
Making Kammas Becoming Fruitless	
使業果無效	
使業不再結果	
Waiting for Dangers	106

Some reflections on this talk	107
等待災難	107
對本講記的補述省思:	109
等待危險	110
關於這次開示的一些反思	110
The Importance of Saving Oneself	112
拯救自己的重要性	113
救度自身的重要性	116
Die with Wrong Views	118
帶著邪見而死	119
帶著邪見而死	123
What Is in the Khandha?	125
五蘊之中有何物?	126
五蘊中是什麼?	129
The Four Dangers	132
四種危險	132
四種危險	
For the Cessation of Existence.	135
為了止息「有」而修	136
為了存在的止息	
Dhamma Increasing of Dukkha	140
法的增苦	140
增長苦的法	142
The Most Fearful Thing	143
最可怖之事	144
最可怕的事	
The Essence of the Buddha Sāsana	148
佛教教法的精髓	149
佛陀教法的精髓	
The Owner of the Khandha	153
《五蘊的主人》	155
五蘊的主人	156
On the Main Road to Nibbāna	159
通往涅槃的正道	159
通往涅槃的正道	160
Following the Khandha with Knowledge	162
隨智慧觀照五蘊	164
以智慧跟隨五蘊	
Permanent and Temporary Homes	169

永久與暫時的住處	170
永久與暫時的居所	
Why Not See Nibbāna?	
。 為何不見涅槃?	
為何不見涅槃?	
Not Yours	
不是你的	178
非你的	
The Oceans Never Dry	
海洋永不乾涸	
海洋永不乾涸	
On Wrong View and Doubt	187
關於邪見與疑惑	
論邪見與疑	190
Who Created Dukkha?	
誰創造了苦?	
誰創造了苦?	
Nature of Stream Enterer	
入流者的本質	
入流者的本質	

Part 16

Right Perception, Knowing and Viewing

20th December 1960

The five objects were like the five spears, and the five khandhas were the things poked by them. Sallato means it has the nature of always trembling (when hit by darts). When it was hit by darts, it became rogato, having diseases, the diseases of dukkha, domanassa, etc. Therefore, the Buddha described them as sallato, yogato, etc. Because of that, feelings (vedanā) of gladness, sorrow, etc., arise. Therefore, having the desire for the khandha means being hit by a spear and dart and suffering with many kinds of feelings. People who pray for the khandha are foolish and stupid. As an example, when the body is poked with the spear of a mosquito, it trembles with dukkha. Vedanā of itching arises. (We can give other examples for other āyatanas). Does this khandha have any desirable affection to own it? Whatever khandha it may be, there's no happiness (i.e., human, devatā, and brahma-god). This body is always having diseases, liable to tremble, and always has to worry about it. (These points are clear in everyday life; with getting older, they become clearer). You all are looking at it with taṇhā eyes, but with the ñāṇa eyes, it never is free from sores.

Therefore, the Buddha tells Nakulapitā that except for the fools, no wise men ever say it is free from diseases (So there are many human fools on earth). Does it have any pleasantness and pleasure here? People think the khandha is free from diseases and pray to get it (think of it as happiness and pleasure). With a wrong perception, they ask wrongly for it (by making merits and prayers). There are three wrong factors that come in: wrong perception, wrong knowing, and wrong viewing. All these arise because you don't know you're hit by spears. Now! You know the culprits who made you get the khandha (i.e., inversions of dhamma). If you can abandon these three wrong factors, you will not get the khandha. With the three right factors coming in, the three wrong factors have to disappear. You must note it as having only mind and form, not as man nor woman, not as a person nor a being. They are perishable phenomena. You have to remove the wrong notions of man and

woman; it has only mind and form. You must observe its arising and vanishing – do you still take it as stable and permanent?

Saying there is no man nor woman means abandoning the wrong perception. Acknowledging that only mind and form exist means abandoning the wrong knowing. You abandon the wrong viewing of stability with the right viewing of instability (i.e., anicca). I'm asking you to contemplate the impermanence of mind and form to abandon the three wrong factors. This is having noble eyes; before it was the blind eyes of a worldling. With the abandoning of diṭṭhi-taṇhā and diṭṭhi-kamma, no apāya khandhas will arise (hell, animal, and ghost). If you can't abandon the three wrong factors, then all kinds of khandha will come to you. Being hit by many kinds of spear and dart will cause many kinds of diseases.

正確的知覺、知見與觀察

1960年12月20日

五塵如同五支長矛,而五蘊則是被這些長矛刺中的對象。「Sallato(如箭之性)」意指具有時時顫抖的特性(被箭刺中時顫動不止)。當被箭所刺時,便變成 rogato(具病之性),即生起病患,如苦(dukkha)、憂惱(domanassa)等諸多煩惱之病。因此,佛陀將五蘊描述為 sallato(如箭)、yogato(如繫縛)等。正因如此,才會生起歡喜、悲傷等各種「受」(vedanā)。

因此,對於色身五蘊起愛欲,便如同被矛與箭所刺,並受諸多感受之苦。那些祈求得五蘊者,實乃愚癡無智之人。舉個例子:當身體被蚊子之矛刺中時,即會因苦而顫抖,並生起搔癢之「受」。其他諸根門也皆有相似的例證可舉。

那麼,這個五蘊之身有什麼值得愛取與擁有的地方嗎?無論是何種五蘊,皆無 真實的樂(包括人、天與梵天之身)。此身常患疾病,易於顫動,並需時時為 之憂慮。這些現象在日常生活中處處可見,年歲漸長時尤為明顯。

你們皆以貪愛之眼來看待色身,然而若以智慧(ñāṇa)之眼觀之,便會發現此身從不曾離開過病患與瘡疤。

因此,佛陀曾對那拘羅父(Nakulapitā)說道:除了愚者之外,無有智者會說此身無病(可見世間愚癡者甚多)。在這五蘊之中,可有任何真實可喜與快樂之處?人們誤以為五蘊無病,遂祈求來得此身,錯認其為快樂與樂受。

因錯誤的知覺,他們便以錯誤的方式去祈求(如修福、祈願等)。這其中參雜 了三種錯誤因素:錯誤的知覺、錯誤的認知、錯誤的見解。

而這一切皆因你未曾知見自己正被長矛刺中之故!如今,你已知造就此五蘊之 兇手(即對法的顛倒見)。若能捨離這三種錯誤因素,便不再受生於五蘊之中。 當三種正確因素生起時,這三種錯誤因素將自然止息。

你必須認清:此身僅由「名」與「色」(nāma-rūpa)所成,並無「男子」、「女子」、亦無「人」或「眾生」可說;它們皆是壞滅之法。你必須捨棄「男與女」的錯誤觀念,只認知它只是「名與色」。

你應觀察它們的生與滅——你還能將它執取為穩固與恆常之物嗎?

說「無有男子、女子」即是捨離錯誤的知覺;知見唯有「名與色」存在,即是 捨離錯誤的認知;觀見「不穩定、不常」(anicca),即是以正見斷除錯誤的 見解。

我現在勸請你們觀照「名與色」的無常性,以斷除此三種錯誤因素。這就是「聖者之眼」——過去的你們只是世間人的盲眼而已。

當**邪見之貪愛(diṭṭhi-taṇhā)與邪見造業(diṭṭhi-kamma)**得以斷除時,便不會再有惡趣之五蘊(地獄、畜生、餓鬼)生起。

倘若無法捨離這三種錯誤因素,則各種五蘊將會接踵而至;被多種矛與箭所刺, 即會生起各種病患與苦受。

正確的感知、知曉與觀看

一九六〇年十二月二十日

五種所緣如同五根標槍,而五蘊則是被標槍刺中的目標。「Sallato」意指其本質總是顫動不安(當被箭矢擊中時)。當它被箭矢擊中時,便成為

「rogato」,意即具有疾病,苦、憂等疾病。因此,佛陀將其描述為

「sallato」、「yogato」等等。由於這個緣故,喜、憂等感受(vedanā)便會生起。因此,渴求五蘊意味著被標槍和箭矢擊中,並承受各種各樣的感受之苦。祈求五蘊的人是愚笨且糊塗的。舉例來說,當身體被蚊子的尖刺刺中時,便會因苦而顫抖,生起搔癢的感受。(我們可以為其他六入處舉出類似的例子)。這個五蘊有任何值得貪愛的迷人之處嗎?無論是何種五蘊,其中都沒有真正的快樂(即人、天人、梵天神)。這個身體總是充滿疾病,容易顫抖,並且總是必須為它擔憂。(這些觀點在日常生活中很清楚;隨著年齡增長,它們會變得更加清晰)。你們都以貪愛的眼光看待它,但以智慧的眼光來看,它從未擺脫瘡痍。

因此,佛陀告訴那拘羅之父,除了愚人之外,沒有智者會說它是沒有疾病的 (所以世上有許多愚人)。這裡有任何的愉悅和快樂嗎?人們認為五蘊是沒有疾病的,並祈求得到它(將其視為快樂和愉悅)。由於錯誤的感知,他們錯誤地祈求它(透過行善和祈禱)。有三種錯誤的因素介入其中:錯誤的感知、錯誤的知曉和錯誤的觀看。所有這些都是因為你不知道自己正被標槍刺中!現在!你已經知道使你得到五蘊的罪魁禍首(即顛倒之法)。如果你能捨棄這三種錯誤的因素,你將不會再得到五蘊。隨著三種正確的因素的到來,三種錯誤的因素必然會消失。你必須將其視為只有名色,而不是男人或女人,不是人或眾生。它們是會壞滅的現象。你必須去除男人和女人的錯誤概念;它只有名色。你必須觀察它的生起和滅去——你仍然認為它是穩定和永恆的嗎?

說沒有男人或女人意味著捨棄錯誤的感知。承認只有名色存在意味著捨棄錯誤的知曉。你以正確的無常之觀捨棄對穩定的錯誤觀看(即無常)。我要求你們觀照名色的無常,以捨棄這三種錯誤的因素。這就是擁有聖者之眼;以前是凡夫的盲眼。隨著見貪(diṭṭhi-taṇhā)和見業(diṭṭhi-kamma)的捨棄,惡趣之蘊(地獄、畜生、餓鬼)將不會生起。如果你不能捨棄這三種錯誤的因素,那麼各種各樣的五蘊都會降臨到你身上。被各種各樣的標槍和箭矢擊中將會導致各種各樣的疾病。

The Quickest Way to End Tanhā

22nd December 1960

I'll teach about the Cūḷataṇhāsaṅkhaya Sutta (this is the shorter discourse on the destruction of craving, sutta no.37, Majjhima Nikāya, MN 037). This is the discourse on the destruction of craving. How should one practice to make the destruction of craving quickly? It's not enough if you only see the khandha. You can arrive at Nibbāna with the discerning of perishing and vanishing (khaya and vaya). If we analyze feeling, there are no more than three types. Firstly, you must discern their perishing and vanishing (by explaining this system of contemplation of feeling). When feelings are arising, you have to see their perishing and vanishing. You see their arising and vanishing with the five path factors (samādhi and paññā). Do you see the feeling as anicca with magga? You don't find feelings (at the time of contemplating). The destruction and vanishing of feeling is nirodha (cessation). So you find out about the cessations (of feelings).

Vedanā nirodha taṇhā nirodho – with the cessation of feeling, craving ceases – Following the cessation of craving is following the five path factors. When taṇhā is not arising, do action (kamma), birth (jāti), ageing (jarā), and death (maraṇa) still arise? (No! Ven. Sir). Instead, in the place of taṇhā not arising, the path factors appear (arise). You have to note about taṇhā nirodho – the cessation of craving in two ways: the cessation where no taṇhā arises and the cessation where taṇhā arises but is stopped.

The cessation that occurs after taṇhā arises is found in the contemplation of the mind — cittānupassanā (see the Satipaṭṭhāna Sutta). After the lobha (greedy) mind rises, by contemplating it ceases (not leading to action). In the contemplation of feeling, both the cause and result cease; sec.3 and sec.4 do not arise. Therefore, the Buddha teaches Sakka that the contemplation of feeling is the quickest way to end taṇhā.

(After listening to the Buddha's teaching, Sakka went back to Heaven and indulged in sensual pleasures, and he forgot about the teaching. We can see the great fault of kāmaguṇa.) If the bad objects come in, the good ones disappear. Whatever you're contemplating, the important point is seeing its perishing and vanishing (i.e., the importance of anicca). With the destruction of feeling, taṇhā does not exist.

Therefore, if you can contemplate the ending of feeling, taṇhā will be finished quickly. (We can see this point illustrated by some Burmese enlightened monks who finished their practices within short periods. For example, Nyaung Loont Tawya Sayadaw (1867-1933) became a stream enterer, and within 10 days, he became an arahant. Soon Loon Sayadaw (1877-1952) – From sotāpanna to arahant (four months) U Manisara (Soon Loon Sayadaw's disciple) became an arahant in seven days. Thae Inn Gu Sayadaw (1913-1973) went from sotāpanna to arahant within two years.)

Therefore, near death, if you can contemplate all the arising of feelings to their ending, you can become a stream enterer and to arahantship. Do you appreciate it? If you contemplate the three feelings in turn, D.A. process is cut off in the beginning, in the middle, and in the end. This is the cessation of samudaya and dukkha. With the four noble truths, the cessation of two truths leads to nirodha and magga. All the cessation of feelings is Nibbāna. Seeing Nibbāna is the path of knowledge.

快速斷除渴愛之道

1960年12月22日

我今天要講解《小渴愛滅經》($C\bar{u}$ lataṇhāsaṅkhaya Sutta,中部第 37 經,Majjhima Nikāya, MN 037)。這是一部講述如何斷除渴愛的經典。那麼,要如何修行,才能快速達到斷除渴愛的目標呢?

若僅僅只是「見到五蘊」,那還是不夠的。唯有觀察「滅與壞」(khaya 與 vaya,即滅去與消逝),才能通向涅槃。若我們分析「受」(vedanā),不過 就是三種而已。首先,你必須觀察它們的壞與滅——這便是「觀受」的修行法 門(vedanānupassanā)。當受在生起時,你必須觀察它的壞滅。透過五道支(正定與智慧等)來觀察其生滅。

當你在觀受時,是否以道智(magga ñāṇa)見到了「受」的無常(anicca)?在觀照當下時,找不到「受」可得。當「受」滅時,即是**滅(nirodha)**。因此,你的修行便是發現「受」的滅去。

vedanā nirodhā taṇhā nirodho ——「受的止息即渴愛的止息」。 當渴愛止息時,就是與「五道支」相應而行。那麼,如果渴愛(taṇhā)不再生 起,行(kamma)、生(jāti)、老(jarā)、死(maraṇa)是否還會發生呢? (不會的,尊者!)

取而代之的是,當渴愛不生起時,「道支」(magganga)便會生起。你必須記住: taṇhā nirodho(渴愛的止息)有兩種情形:

- 1. 未起而不生(tanhā 不曾生起);
- 2. 已生而止息(taṇhā 雖生而被止息)。

對於**渴愛生後而止息**的觀察,則屬於「觀心」(cittānupassanā,見《四念處經》)。當貪心(lobha citta)生起時,若能觀它而使之止息(不再導向造作),便是心念處的修法。

而在觀「受」的修行中,不但**因(taṇhā)**止息,**果(kamma 及後段生死)**也不再生起——第二與第三支(愛與取)不復出現。

因此,佛陀曾教導帝釋(Sakka):觀受是最快速斷除渴愛的方法。

(然而,聽聞佛陀開示後,帝釋返回天界,卻又沈迷於五欲樂,忘失了法義。 從此可見「欲境」(kāmaguṇa)的重大過失。)

當惡境來臨時,善境便會消失。因此,不論你正在觀察的是何法,重點都在於 見其「壞與滅」——也就是無常(anicca)的見解。

當「受」壞滅時,渴愛便不再存在。因此,若你能觀照「受」的止息,渴愛便 能迅速結束。

(這點我們可從一些緬甸證悟長老的修行歷程中看出:例如,Nyaung Loont Tawya 禪師(1867–1933),於短時間內證得入流果,十天內成為阿羅漢;Soon Loon 禪師(1877–1952),從須陀洹果至阿羅漢花了四個月;其弟子 U Manisara 七日內證得阿羅漢果;Thae Inn Gu 禪師(1913–1973)則於兩年內由入流果至阿羅漢。)

因此,**臨終之際**,若你能觀察所有「受」的生與滅,便能證得入流果,乃至阿羅漢果。你是否能理解並珍惜這一點呢?

若你輪流觀察三受(樂受、苦受、不苦不樂受),便能在「起始處、中間處、 末端處」三處截斷緣起流(D.A. process),這即是集諦與苦諦的止息。依四聖 諦而言,止息兩諦,即是導向「**滅與道**」之道。

所有受的止息,即是涅槃。

見到涅槃,即是**智道之行**(paṭipadā ñāṇa dassana magga)。

終結渴愛的捷徑

一九六〇年十二月二十二日

我將講述《小愛盡經》(Cūlataṇhāsaṅkhaya Sutta,這是關於滅除渴愛的較短經文,經號第三十七,中部尼柯耶,MN 037)。這是關於滅除渴愛的經文。應如何修習才能快速地滅除渴愛呢?僅僅看到五蘊是不夠的。你們可以透過辨識壞滅與消逝(khaya 和 vaya)而證入涅槃。如果我們分析感受,不會超過三種類型。首先,你們必須辨識它們的壞滅與消逝(透過解釋這個感受觀的修習體系)。當感受生起時,你們必須看到它們的壞滅與消逝。你們以五道支(定與慧)看到它們的生起與消逝。你們是否以道(magga)見到感受是無常的(anicca)?(在觀照的當下)你們找不到感受。感受的滅盡與消逝是涅槃(nirodha,止息)。所以你們會發現(感受的)止息。

感受滅則愛滅(Vedanā nirodha taṇhā nirodho)——隨著感受的止息,渴愛也止息——跟隨渴愛的止息便是跟隨五道支。當渴愛不再生起時,行為(kamma)、生(jāti)、老(jarā)和死(maraṇa)還會生起嗎?(不會的,尊者)。相反地,在渴愛不生起的地方,道支會顯現(生起)。你們必須注意渴愛的止息(taṇhā nirodho)有兩種方式:渴愛不再生起的止息,以及渴愛生起但被止息的止息。

渴愛生起後發生的止息,可在心隨觀(cittānupassanā)中找到(見《念處經》)。在貪婪(lobha)的心生起之後,透過觀照它便會止息(不會導致行為)。在感受隨觀中,因和果都止息了;第二支和第三支不再生起。因此,佛陀教導釋提桓因,感受隨觀是終結渴愛最快的方法。(聽聞佛陀的教導後,釋提桓因回到天界,沉溺於感官樂趣,並忘記了教導。我們可以看見欲樂的巨大過失。)如果惡的對象進來,善的對象就會消失。無論你們觀照什麼,重點是看到它的壞滅與消逝(即無常的重要性)。隨著感受的滅盡,渴愛便不存在。

因此,如果你們能夠觀照感受的止息,渴愛將會迅速地結束。(我們可以從一些緬甸開悟的僧侶身上看到這個例子的證明,他們在很短的時間內完成了他們的修行。例如,娘隆答雅尊者(Nyaung Loont Tawya Sayadaw,1867-1933)成為入流者,並在十天內成為阿羅漢。孫倫尊者(Soon Loon Sayadaw,1877-1952)——從入流者到阿羅漢(四個月)。伍馬尼沙拉尊者(U Manisara,孫倫尊者的弟子)在七天內成為阿羅漢。塔因古尊者(Thae Inn Gu Sayadaw,1913-1973)在兩年內從入流者到阿羅漢。)

因此,在臨終之際,如果你們能夠觀照所有生起的感受直至其止息,你們可以 成為入流者,乃至阿羅漢。你們體會到它的價值嗎?如果你們依次觀照三種感 受,緣起(D.A.)的過程會在開始、中間和結束時被切斷。這是集與苦的止息。 透過四聖諦,兩種真理的止息會導向滅與道。所有感受的止息就是涅槃。見到 涅槃是智慧之道。

The Importance of Spiritual Friend

17th January 1961

[This Dhamma talk is delivered to a lay disciple U Ba Yin on the practice of contemplation of the minds. It describes the importance of meeting a spiritual friend as mentioned before by the Buddha. It also supports the 2nd blessing of consorting with wise men in the Mangala Sutta, which every human being should know and follow. This is the best form of noble education for humans by all the Buddhas.]

(Firstly, Sayadaw mentions birth from a mother's womb and continues to explain about ageing, sickness, and death – the whole mass of suffering). This happens due to not encountering a good teacher and being unable to find him by oneself. Therefore, you're turning around with these four dukkha saccas – pīļanaṭṭha – oppressive, saṅkhatatha – conditioning, santāpatha – burning with taṇhā fire, and vipariṇāmatha – changing or afflicted. In a past life you were also with these four factors of dukkha. If you can't free yourself in this life, then in the next life you also will turn around with these dukkhas. You have to find a different route before you arrive at ageing and sickness. (Here Sayadaw talks about the importance of a spiritual friend – kalyāṇa-mitta, and the two jhāna teachers of the Bodhisatta). There're many disadvantages to dying early and not finding a kalyāṇa-mitta. It's important to attain the Dhamma.

(Sayadaw continues to talk about the practice) What are the nature and function of the five khandhas? Their nature is sabbe sankhāra anicca — arising and vanishing, arising and vanishing all the time. Their duty is only this! The khandha's task is to be impermanent. (Sayadaw gives him the example of an electric light continuously lighting). Mind and form (rūpa) are arising and vanishing in this way. If you look at it in a normal way, it looks like a lump of mass. You can't see its true nature (with a defiled mind) [continues on the practice of the mind] You can't see the continuous arising due to the velocity of form in section by section. But you can see the changing of the mind. You have to work with contemplation of the mind. You must look at your mind arising with your ñāṇa — knowledge.

Firstly, you should practice samādhi. (Sayadaw continues to talk about how to develop samādhi with ānāpānasati as yesterday. I have translated it before with the title "Importance of Samādhi" – 16th January 1961, in Part 10) If you have samādhi,

use this samādhi to work on the khandha. For example, there's a seeing mind that arises, and then a hearing mind arises. When the hearing mind arises, the seeing mind no longer exists. If you have samādhi, you know the arising and vanishing of the mind. So whatever mind arises, you know it's arising and also vanishing. (Knowing all of the minds from the six sense doors. Sayadaw gives the simile of a spider for insight practice). They are all vanishing, and the contemplative mind becomes magga – insight knowledge. You have to make an effort to let vanishing dhamma and path factors of dhamma fit in together. We're contemplating 13 types of mind; citta here means 13 kinds of mind and anupassanā means contemplating. So it's cittānupassanā. What's the benefit of this way of contemplation? It leads to anicca and magga. You attain magga. Magga cuts off all taṇhā, upādāna, and kamma. Does it still connect to the round of existence? Therefore, I am asking you to do it. You have to note down two ways of contemplation.

(Sayadaw explains the two ways of contemplation to U Ba Yin. These are the two qualities of the six Dhamma attributes - ehi passiko; sandiṭṭhiko). Ehi means come! And passa means contemplate me. Contemplate whatever is arising. They are the callers (dhammas). Sanditthika is the followers (yogis), i.e., contemplating. What's the benefit of magga continuously meeting with the vanishing phenomena? It becomes akāliko – apparent here and now, non-temporal (another attribute of Dhamma). This is the result of the dittha dhamma – seeing Dhamma directly by oneself. So it cuts off defilements of the mind. If there is no contemplation, the mind connects to defilements by following one of the lobha, dosa, and moha kilesas. With contemplation, these enemies die. The extinction of defilements is Nibbāna. Therefore, someone who contemplates will be closer to Nibbāna. If you follow it, you will get the five path factors. (Sayadaw explains them). They can't be separated in (samādhi and paññā during vipassanā). It's Kālika – time consuming if you don't follow it. It continues the D.A. process. It's Akālika – timeless if you follow it. It cuts off the D.A. process. (See my translation on the talk – Time Consuming and Timeless, 8th December 1960, Part 4).

The following mind is one mind (i.e., magganga), and the vanishing mind is one mind (object). A being can't be alive with two minds at the same moment. It has to be alive with only one mind from moment to moment. Therefore, you find out that the mind object does not exist there. In this way, you're looking at your own death. You are following behind the dead mind with the living mind. Similarly, we can customarily follow the dead person with the alive person (in a funeral to the

cremation). Do you want to see your own death? If you can focus on one Dhamma, you will arrive at Magga. No need to talk about all of them.

善知識的重要性

1961年1月17日

(本篇法語為尊者對在家弟子 U Ba Yin 關於觀心修行所開示,說明了佛陀曾強調與善知識相遇的重要性,也呼應了《吉祥經》中的第二項吉祥:「親近智者」。這是諸佛所共讚的人類最高教育之道,世間人皆應知曉與奉行。)

(一開始,尊者提到從母胎出生,進而說明老、病、死的歷程——即整體的苦蘊聚集。這一切的發生,皆因未能遇到善知識,也無能力自行發現正道。於是你就在四種苦諦中輪轉——**逼迫性(pīļanaṭṭha)、有為性(saṅkhatatha)、燒煎性(santāpatha)與變壞性(vipariṇāmatha)**。在過去世,你也曾與這四種苦相共處;若今生無法解脫,來世仍將在這些苦中輪轉。因此,在老病到來之前,你必須另尋出路。)

(在此,尊者進一步講述善知識——kalyāṇa-mitta——的重要性,並提到菩薩在過去生中曾遇到兩位禪修導師之事。)

若早死而未遇善知識,將有諸多不利之處。故證得法(Dhamma)極其重要。 (接著尊者進入修行主題)

那麼,五蘊(khandha)是什麼性質?有何作用? 其本質就是「一切有為法皆無常(sabbe saṅkhārā aniccā)」——不斷地生起與 滅去、生起與滅去。它們的「職責」僅此而已!五蘊的任務就是展現無常。 (尊者以電燈持續閃爍為喻)

名色(nāma-rūpa)即是如此不斷地生滅。若以凡夫之心(染污之心)來看,就只見到一團物質,無法見其真實相。

(尊者繼續開示觀心修行)

由於色法迅速轉變、分段接續,因此你無法見到它連續生起的過程,但你卻可以見到心的轉變。因此,你必須修習**觀心**(cittānupassanā)。你要以智慧(ñāṇa)來觀察當下心的生起。

首先,你應先修習**定**(samādhi)。(尊者接著如前一日開示般,說明如何以安那般那念建立定力。我已於1961年1月16日的第十篇翻譯中標題為〈定的重要性〉。)

當你具備定力後,便可用此定力來觀照五蘊。舉例來說:見心生起後,聽心便生起;聽心生起時,見心已滅。

若你具足定力,便能知心的生起與滅去。無論何種心生起,你皆能知其「生」 與「滅」。(也就是觀六門生起之心。)

(尊者以蜘蛛為譬喻,說明觀心修行)

一切之心皆在滅去,而觀照之心即成為**道智**(magga ñāṇa,觀智)。你要努力使「滅去的法」與「正道的法支」兩者相合。

我們正在觀的共有十三類心(citta),「觀察」則是 anupassanā,故此修法稱為 cittānupassanā(觀心念處)。

那麼,此法有何利益?——**能導向無常與道智(anicca & magga)**,使你證得**道智**,而道智能斷除一切渴愛、執取與業(taṇhā、upādāna、kamma)。如此,是否還會再連結生死輪迴?因此,我勸你要如實修行此法。

你應記下兩種觀法:

(尊者向 U Ba Yin 解說兩種觀法,對應法的六大特性中的兩種——ehipassiko 與 sandiṭṭhiko。)

- ehi:來吧!
- passa:觀照我!

觀照任何正在生起的法,它們就是「呼喚者」(法的呼喚),而「sandiṭṭhika」則是「修行者」(觀者,yogī)——即實際觀照。

那麼,當「道智」不斷與「滅法」相遇,有何益處?這便成為 akālika (現見的、非時間性的),是另一種法的特質。

這就是所謂的 **diṭṭhadhamma** 果報——親自見法的果報。當你如此修行時,便能斷除心中的煩惱。若不修觀,則心會隨著貪(lobha)、瞋(dosa)、癡(moha)等煩惱而轉,與之相應。

但當你修觀時,這些內敵便會死亡,煩惱的止息就是涅槃(Nibbāna)。

因此,修觀者會更加接近涅槃。若你依此修行,便能獲得五道支 (magganga)。(尊者逐一說明五道支)

在觀行(vipassanā)中,正定與智慧是不可分離的。

若不修行,將成為 kālika (曠時之法),即延續緣起流(D.A. process)。

若你依此正法而行,則為 akālika(即刻之法),可截斷緣起流。

(詳見我於1960年12月8日《曠時與非時之法》第四篇的翻譯內容。)

「觀者之心」為一心(即道支心),「所滅之心」亦為一心(即所觀之對象)。 眾生無法在同一剎那同時有兩個心存在,必定是逐一心續而活。

因此,你會發現心所緣之法並不存在於當下。你此刻所觀的,即是自己的死亡。你是以「活著的心」去「跟隨死去的心」。這就如同人們在喪禮中,以「活人」送「死者」去火葬場一樣。

你想要看見自己的死亡嗎?若你能專注於一法,便能證入**道智(Magga)**。不必講太多法門,只要實修此一法,即可達成。

善知識的重要性

一九六一年一月十七日

[這篇佛法開示是對在家弟子吳巴因居士關於觀心修行的教導。它闡述了如佛陀 先前所說,遇到善知識的重要性。它也支持《吉祥經》中「親近智者」的第二

種吉祥,這是每個人都應該知道並遵循的。這是所有佛陀為人類提供的最佳高尚教育形式。]

(首先,尊者提到從母胎出生,並繼續解釋衰老、疾病和死亡——整個苦蘊)。

這一切的發生,是由於沒有遇到好的老師,並且自己也無法找到。因此,你們在這些四聖諦的苦中輪迴——逼惱苦(pīlanaṭṭha)、行苦(saṅkhatatha)、為渴愛之火所燒的熱惱苦(santāpatha)以及變壞苦(vipariṇāmatha)。在過去世,你們也同樣經歷著這四種苦的因素。如果今生你們無法解脫,那麼來世你們也將繼續在這苦中輪迴。在到達衰老和疾病之前,你們必須找到一條不同的道路。(在這裡,尊者談到了善知識(kalyāṇa-mitta)的重要性,以及菩薩的兩位禪定老師)。早逝且沒有找到善知識有很多壞處。證得佛法非常重要。

(尊者繼續談論修行)五蘊的本質和作用是什麼?它們的本質是「sabbe saṅkhāra anicca」——切有為法皆無常,不斷地生起和滅去,生起和滅去。它們的職責僅此而已!五蘊的任務就是無常。(尊者舉了電燈持續照明的例子)。

名色(rūpa)就是這樣生起和滅去的。如果以一般的方式來看,它看起來像是一團物質。你們無法看到它的真實本質(以染污的心)。[繼續談論心的修行]由於色法的速度太快,你們無法逐段看到它持續的生起。但是你們可以看到心的變化。你們必須透過觀心來修行。

你們必須以你們的智慧(ñāṇa)觀看你們生起的心。首先,你們應該修習禪定(samādhi)。(尊者繼續談論如何像昨天一樣以安那般那念來發展禪定。我之前已將其翻譯過,標題為「禪定的重要性」———九六一年一月十六日,收錄於第十部分)。

如果你們有禪定,就用這個禪定來觀照五蘊。例如,一個見的心生起,然後一個聽的心生起。當聽的心生起時,見的心就不再存在了。如果你們有禪定,你們會知道心的生起和滅去。所以無論什麼心生起,你們都知道它正在生起,也正在滅去。(知道六根門生起的所有心。尊者用蜘蛛來比喻觀慧的修行)。它們都在滅去,而觀照的心就成為道(magga)——觀慧。你們必須努力使滅去的法和道的法支相互契合。我們觀照十三種心;這裡的「citta」意指十三種心,「anupassanā」意指觀照。所以這是「cittānupassanā」(心隨觀)。這種觀照方式有什麼好處呢?它導向無常(anicca)和道(magga)。你們證得道。道切斷所有的渴愛(taṇhā)、執取(upādāna)和業(kamma)。它還會與輪迴相連嗎?

因此,我要求你們這樣做。你們必須記錄下兩種觀照的方式。

(尊者向吳巴因居士解釋了兩種觀照的方式。這是六種法之特質中的兩種一來見(ehi passiko);自見(sandiṭṭhiko))。「Ehi」意指來!「passa」意指觀照我。觀照任何正在生起的。它們是召喚者(諸法)。「Sandiṭṭhika」是追隨者(瑜伽行者),即觀照。道持續地與滅去的現象相遇有什麼好處呢?它會變成「akāliko」——在此時此地顯現,非時間性的(法的另一個特質)。這是「diṭṭha dhamma」(自見法)的結果——親自直接見到法。所以它切斷了心的染污。如果沒有觀照,心會透過追隨貪(lobha)、瞋(dosa)和癡(moha)等煩惱而與染污相連。透過觀照,這些敵人會死去。煩惱的止滅就是涅槃。因此,觀照的人會更接近涅槃。如果你們遵循它,你們將會得到五道支。(尊者解釋了它們)。

它們在毗婆舍那(vipassanā)期間無法分離(定與慧)。如果不遵循它,就是「Kālika」——耗費時間,它會延續緣起(D.A.)的過程。如果遵循它,就是「Akālika」——無時間性的,它會切斷緣起的過程。(參見我對「耗時與無時」(Time Consuming and Timeless,一九六〇年十二月八日,第四部分)的翻譯)。

追隨的心是一個心(即道支),而滅去的心是一個心(所緣)。一個眾生不可能在同一時刻擁有兩個心。它必須在每個當下只以一個心存在。因此,你們會發現心的對象在那裡並不存在。這樣,你們就是在看著自己的死亡。你們正以活著的心追隨著已死的心。同樣地,我們通常會以活著的人跟隨死去的人(在葬禮上到火葬場)。你們想看到自己的死亡嗎?如果你們能專注於一個法,你們將會證得道。無需談論所有法。

Where Is Dukkha Coming from?

28th May 1961

[This talk was based on – Sammasana Sutta, SN 12. 66, and Nadī Sutta, SN 22. 93]

Birth, ageing, and death are the greatest Dukkha. Where are they coming from? You have to investigate them. They come from the five khandhas. The five khandhas are dukkha sacca. They have many kinds of dukkha. They are dukkha themselves and support dukkha. Again, where's the khandha coming from? It comes from making prayers due to taṇhā. (so taṇhā is the creator, to worship the creator is to worship taṇhā) Therefore, if taṇhā exists, then khandha exists. Only kamma cannot create the khandha. Taṇhā is the basic cause for becoming a khandha (or a being). Therefore, taṇhā is more important than kamma. Don't say that due to not having good kamma (bad luck), dukkha comes to me. Instead, you have to say it is due to the existence of the khandha. It is like water existing in a pot (profound analogy). Through the contemplation of truth, you will arrive at Nibbāna. From the khandha, dukkha becomes multiplied. (ageing, sickness, death, etc.) The khandha is dukkha sacca and taṇhā is samudaya sacca. There is no kamma included. Due to taṇhā, the khandha arises. Because of the khandha, you experience many kinds of dukkha. (with modern material progress it has increased and become more complicated).

With no cutting off of kammas, you only get dukkha. But people prefer good kammas. Whoever is expecting that, when I will have good kamma means, it is the same as expecting when I will have to encounter sufferings. Only when taṇhā ends, kammas will end. But you think, "I have to rely on kam-mother and kam-father." If you rely on kam-parents will get Dukkha. (kam is kamma in Burmese)

Again, where is this taṇhā coming from? It comes from affectionate things (beings and objects). In another way, it comes from the present khandha. Does taṇhā come from the five khandhas? No, it doesn't, it comes only from someone who has a wrong view of this khandha. Taṇhā arises when you take it as lovely and affectionate. It arises when you take the khandha as stable, pleasant, etc. If you think of it as unstable and suffering, etc., taṇhā will not arise. For example, this khandha is like liquor mixed with poison. If you thirst for it and go and drink, you will suffer. If you can contemplate its anicca by not drinking, taṇhā will die. It's important not to drink

it. You'll drink it if you have affection. In this way, it has only two truths (dukkha and samudaya). In the whole of samsāra, it will be dukkha sacca (sec.2) \rightarrow samudaya sacca (sec.3) \rightarrow dukkha sacca (sec.4).

(Here, the recorded tape of the sound or voice is not very clear. According to Sayadaw, the 12 links of the D.A. process come from the Sammasana Sutta. Whatever one does with taṇhā becomes dukkha sacca. (After talking about the Sammasana Sutta, Sayadaw continues to talk about the Nadī Sutta).

Note: I have translated a Dhamma talk based on the Nadī Sutta, Khandhavagga-saṃyutta, by Sayadaw, which can be found in part II with the title – Bond with Diṭṭhi Rope and Carrying Away by Taṇhā Water.

苦從何來?

1961年5月28日

(本篇法語依據《審思經》(Sammasana Sutta,相應部 SN 12.66)與《河流經》(Nadī Sutta,相應部 SN 22.93)而說)

生、老、死是最大的苦。那麼,這些苦從何而來?你必須親自調查與審思。它們源自五蘊(pañcakkhandhā)。五蘊即是**苦諦(dukkha sacca)**,它們本身就是苦,亦是苦的根源,具備各種形式的苦。

那麼,五蘊又從哪裡來?是從「**出於貪愛的祈求**」而來的。(所以,**貪愛**即是創造者;若你崇拜創造者,就等於崇拜「貪愛」)

因此,只要**貪愛存在**,五**蘊便存在**。僅靠業(kamma)是無法創造出五蘊的, **貪愛才是構成五蘊(或眾生)的根本因**。所以,**貪愛比業更重要**。

不要說:「因為我沒有好業(運氣不好),所以苦臨到我。」你應該這樣說: 「是因為我擁有這個五蘊之身,所以苦來了。」

這就如同水存在於水壺之中——一個極具深意的譬喻。

透過**對真理的觀察**,你將通達涅槃。從五蘊中,苦被層層放大(老、病、死等皆從中而生)。五蘊即是**苦諦(dukkha sacca)**,而貪愛則是**集諦(samudaya sacca)**,此處並無業(kamma)的介入。

因貪愛而有五蘊;因有五蘊,你便經歷種種形式的苦。

(即使現代物質進步,也只讓苦增多,且形式更複雜)

若未能斷除業,你只會獲得苦。但世人偏偏希望有「好業」。若有人期盼: 「什麼時候我才能有好業呢?」其實這與期盼「什麼時候我會再遭遇苦」是一 樣的。

唯有當**貪愛止息,業才會終止**。但你卻總想著:「我要依靠業母、業父而活。」(註:「業母業父」即是緬語裡對 kamma 的戲稱)

若你依靠「業父業母」,那麼所得到的便是「苦」!

那麼,這**貪愛**又從哪裡來?它來自於對可愛之物(人、物)的愛著。換句話說, 它來自**當下的五蘊**。

然而,貪愛是否來自於五蘊本身?——不是的!

它來自**錯誤見解**的人對五蘊的誤認。當你將五蘊認為是可愛的、令人愛著的, 它便生起了。當你把五蘊認為是恆常的、愉悅的,它就會生起。

但若你思惟它是無常的、痛苦的等等,貪愛便不會生起。

舉例來說:這個五蘊就像是摻了毒的酒——若你渴望它並去飲用,便會受苦。

但若你能思惟它的無常,而**不飲此毒酒**,那麼**貪愛就會死亡**。關鍵是:**不要去喝它!**

你之所以會喝,是因為你愛它。

因此,整體而言,只涉及兩個聖諦:

- 苦諦 (dukkha)
- 集諦 (samudaya)

整個輪迴(saṁsāra)的模式就是:

- → 苦諦(第二支)
- → 集諦(第三支)

- → 苦諦(第四支)
- ... 如此循環不已。

(此處錄音帶音質不佳,聲音不太清楚。根據尊者開示,《審思經》中已說明: **緣起的十二支**皆源於貪愛。只要一切造作中有貪愛,即是苦諦。)

(尊者講完《審思經》後,又繼續講解《河流經》)

註:我曾翻譯過尊者根據《河流經》(Nadī Sutta)所開示的一篇法語,內容收錄於第二輯,標題為〈被見繩綁住,被貪水沖走〉(Bond with Diṭṭhi Rope and Carrying Away by Taṇhā Water)。

苦從何來?

一九六一年五月二十八日

[本次開示基於《審察經》(Sammasana Sutta,SN 12.66)與《河流經》(Nadī Sutta,SN 22.93)]

生、老、死是最大的苦。它們從何而來?你們必須加以探究。它們來自五蘊。 五蘊是苦諦。它們有許多種苦。它們本身就是苦,並且支持著苦。那麼,五蘊 又是從何而來呢?它來自於由於渴愛(taṇhā)而產生的祈求。(所以渴愛是創 造者,崇拜創造者就是崇拜渴愛)因此,如果渴愛存在,那麼五蘊就存在。僅 僅業(kamma)無法創造五蘊。渴愛是成為五蘊(或一個眾生)的根本原因。 因此,渴愛比業更重要。不要說由於沒有好的業(壞運氣),苦才降臨到我身 上。相反地,你們必須說這是由於五蘊的存在。這就像水存在於一個罐子裡一 樣(深刻的比喻)。透過對真理的觀照,你們將會到達涅槃。從五蘊開始,苦 會不斷增長(衰老、疾病、死亡等等)。五蘊是苦諦,而渴愛是集諦。其中不 包含業。由於渴愛,五蘊生起。由於五蘊,你們體驗到許多種苦(隨著現代物 質的進步,苦已經增加並變得更加複雜)。 如果不切斷業,你們只會得到苦。但是人們偏愛好的業。任何期待「我何時會有好的業」的人,就如同期待「我何時會遭遇苦難」一樣。只有當渴愛止息時,業才會止息。但是你們認為:「我必須依靠業之母和業之父。」如果你們依靠業之父母,將會得到苦。(「kam」在緬甸語中是「kamma」的意思)。

那麼,這個渴愛又是從何而來呢?它來自於令人愛戀的事物(眾生和物品)。 另一方面,它來自於當前的五蘊。渴愛是從五蘊而來的嗎?不,不是的,它只來自於對這個五蘊持有錯誤見解的人。當你們將五蘊視為可愛和令人愛戀時, 渴愛就會生起。當你們將五蘊視為穩定、快樂等等時,它就會生起。如果你們 將其視為不穩定和痛苦等等,渴愛就不會生起。例如,這個五蘊就像混合了毒 藥的酒。如果你們渴望它並去飲用,你們將會受苦。如果你們能夠透過不飲用 來觀照它的無常,渴愛就會死去。不飲用它非常重要。如果你們有愛戀,你們 就會飲用它。這樣,它只有兩個真諦(苦諦和集諦)。在整個輪迴中,它將是 苦諦(第二聖諦)→集諦(第三聖諦)→苦諦(第四聖諦)。

(在此,錄音帶的聲音不太清楚。根據尊者的說法,《審察經》闡述了緣起十二支的由來。任何以渴愛所做的一切都會成為苦諦。(在談論完《審察經》後,尊者繼續談論《河流經》))。

註:我曾翻譯過一篇基於《河流經》,蘊相應(Khandhavagga-saṃyutta)的尊者開示,可以在第二部分找到,標題為——以見繩束縛,為愛水沖走。

The Greatest Enemy

30th June 1960

Strip off wrong views first and contemplate anicca later. Today I'll talk about ditthi and tanhā. After you have exterminated wrong views first, then exterminate craving later. Why is that? It is because you want to become a stream enterer. If you want to become a non-returner and arahant, you should exterminate craving. Before me, people used to talk about the extermination of craving, and not about the killing of wrong views. You have to note that the process of the practice is straying away from the main point. Only after killing the wrong views will you attain higher knowledge (i.e., from once-returner to arahant). You have to climb up step by step, unable to skip it. If not, your time is wasted and you will not reach the goal. If you kill wrong views, the coarser forms of craving, including wrong view, will be eradicated by itself. Craving will drift you away at its will if wrong views are not killed. If you exterminate wrong views, craving will be unable to drift you to the four apāyas. You have to remember that the worldlings who take the khandha to be me are the biggest enemy. If you exterminate craving first, it is like killing someone who is not an enemy first. Knowing how to exterminate it will free you from the enemy. Drifting beings to the four apays is not the nature of craving. It is the work of wrong views. Ditthi is the most fearsome enemy. Sassata and uccheda views will arise if you take the khandha as me every time it arises.

If you exterminate something which should not be exterminated first, it will increase the dangers, otherwise, it will free you from them. With the companion of ditthi, craving will send beings wherever it likes in the 31 realms of existence. From sotāpanna to anāgāmi, one can't fall into the apāyas because they have no wrong views (they still have some forms of craving).

You have to understand the D.A. process of your khandha if you want to exterminate ditthi. The disappearance of a person or a being is the disappearance of ditthi. You're killing ditthi if you know your khandha D.A. process. There are many types of mind arising, not a person nor a being (Sayadaw gives examples of them). There are many types of feelings arising, not a person nor a being. Ditthi will fall away if you know the phenomena that arise from the khandha. You make it fall away by mindfulness and wisdom. The fall of Ditthi is number one. Contemplation of arising and falling is number two. If you know whatever is arising, there is no I-ness

in them. This is the stripping away of diṭṭhi. Knowing one's mind is knowing the D.A. process. Diṭṭhi will stick with you if you see whatever is arising as – this is me, this is me, etc. If your knowledge is not mixed up with the <u>I-ness</u>, it is good enough. Don't fear greed and anger. You have to fear becoming the <u>I-ness</u>. If you say – "Don't challenge me". Then your anger becomes you. If you say, I want to have it, then greed becomes the <u>I-ness</u>. Sotāpanna still has greed and anger, but they will not fall into the apāyas. Why is that? It is because there is no <u>I</u> and <u>me</u> inside them.

(Sayadaw continues with the Anurādha Sutta, SN 22. 86, in the Khandhavagga Saṃyutta). Why are there three different knowledges? (this refers to anicca, dukkha, and anatta ñāṇas). The real existence is only arising and vanishing phenomena. These three ñāṇas are clear to each person differently in their contemplation. The object is not different, but dhamma is only one — whatever is arising in the khandha, rising and falling is dukkha sacca, knowing it is magga sacca, taṇhā not arising is samudaya sacca, and the cessation of dukkha is nirodha sacca. It only has the four truths. Is there any I-ness and me included in the process? Only dukkha arising and dukkha ceasing exist in the process. No person nor a being is there.

The monk Anurādha had a wrong view and doubts, so he couldn't answer the questions posed to him by the followers of wrong views (outside faith).

最巨大的敵人

1960年6月30日

首先,要**先剷除邪見(diṭṭhi)**,之後才是觀照無常(anicca)。今天我要講的主題是「邪見與渴愛(taṇhā)」。你必須**先斷邪見,再斷渴愛**。為什麼要這樣次第修行?因為你若想證得**入流果(sotāpanna)**,就必須先滅除邪見;若你想成為不還者(anāgāmī)或阿羅漢(arahant),那就必須進一步滅除渴愛。

在我之前,人們常常談論「滅除渴愛」,卻很少談到「剷除邪見」。你要記得: 修行的關鍵若偏離了斷除邪見這一步,整個修行路徑就已偏離核心重點。 只有**剷除邪見**,你才能獲得更高層次的智慧(從一來者至阿羅漢的進展)。你 必須**按部就班地攀登階梯**,無法跳過這個步驟。否則,你的時間將被白白浪費, 目標也無法達成。

當你剷除邪見後,連帶地,一切較粗重的貪愛與錯見也會自然滅除。若不先剷除邪見,**貪愛會任意將你漂流推送至各種境地**。

若你能剷除邪見,**貪愛就無法再將你拖入四惡趣**(地獄、畜生、餓鬼、阿修羅)。

你要記得:世間凡夫執取五蘊為「我」者,才是你最大的敵人。

若你先去斷除渴愛,那就好比你殺了一個其實不是你真正敵人的人。只有**知道 應該如何剷除邪見**,你才真正解脫於敵人之手。

墮入四惡趣的因並非來自渴愛,而是來自邪見。 邪見(diṭṭhi)才是最可怕的敵人。

若你於每一次五蘊生起時,都錯誤地認為「這是我」,那麼**常見(sassata)與斷見(uccheda)**就會不斷生起。

若你去滅除那些不應先滅除的法,將會帶來更多的危險;但若你依正次第行事, 便能免於一切災難。

與邪見相伴的貪愛,會將眾生推向三十一有的任何境界。

從**入流果至不還果的聖者**,不會墮入惡趣,因為他們已經**斷除了邪見**(雖然他們仍有某些層次的貪愛)。

若你想斷除邪見,就必須**正確了解自身五蘊的緣起過程(D.A. process)**。

一個「人」或「眾生」的滅亡,其實是邪見的滅亡。

你若知見自身五蘊的緣起流程,便是在斷除邪見。

五蘊中生起的是**許多種類的心**,而不是一個「人」或「眾生」; 五蘊中生起的是**許多種類的受(vedanā)**,也不是一個「人」或「眾生」。

若你能見到五蘊法的生起實相,邪見便會自然退散。

這要靠正念與智慧來使其崩解。

邪見的斷除是首要之事; 其次才是對生滅的觀照。

若你能如實知見一切正在生起的法,即不會在其中執取「我」。

這就是真正的「剝離我見(ditthi)」之行。

了知自己的心,即是了知緣起之流(D.A.)。

若你在每個生起法中都生起錯誤的想法——「這是我、這是我」——那麼**邪見 就會牢牢黏附於你**。

但若你的知見中**沒有摻雜「我見」的成分**,那就是善見(正見)。

不要害怕貪與瞋,應該害怕的是「我見」的生起。

當你說:「別挑戰我!」那你的瞋恨已經與「我」認同了;當你說:「我想擁有它!」那你的貪心已與「我」認同了。

入流果聖者仍有貪與瞋,但他們不會墮入惡趣。為什麼?因為在他們心中,已 無我與我所。

(尊者接著講解《阿努羅陀經》(Anurādha Sutta,相應部 SN 22.86,五蘊相應))

為什麼會有三種不同的智慧?(即無常智、苦智、無我智)

因為實相中只有「生起與滅去的法」存在。

這三種智慧(ñāṇa)會依每位行者的觀照深度而有所差異。

觀照的對象雖同,但法本身唯是一法——即五蘊中所生起的現象。

其生滅即是**苦諦**;知見其生滅即是**道諦**;貪愛不生起即是**集諦之斷**;苦的止息即是**滅諦**。

整體而言,這就是四聖諦。

這一整個過程中,是否包含了「我」或「我所」?

不,只有苦的生起與苦的止息而已,並無一人或眾生在其中。

比丘阿努羅陀曾因執著邪見與懷疑,導致無法回答外道的提問。

最大的敵人

一九六〇年六月三十日

並非渴愛的本質, 而是錯誤見解的作用。

首先去除錯誤的見解,然後再觀照無常。今天我將談論邪見(diṭṭhi)和渴愛(tanhā)。在你首先根除錯誤的見解之後,再根除渴愛。

為什麼要這樣做呢?因為你想要成為入流者(sotāpanna)。如果你想要成為不還者(anāgāmi)和阿羅漢(arahant),你應該根除渴愛。在我之前,人們過去常談論根除渴愛,而不是消滅錯誤的見解。你必須注意到,修行的過程正偏離重點。只有在消滅錯誤的見解之後,你才能獲得更高的智慧(即從一來者到阿羅漢)。你必須一步一步地攀登,無法跳過。否則,你的時間將會浪費,你將無法達到目標。如果你消滅了錯誤的見解,較粗的渴愛形式,包括錯誤的見解本身,將會自然而然地被根除。

如果錯誤的見解沒有被消滅,渴愛將會隨意地將你帶走。如果你根除了錯誤的 見解,渴愛將無法將你帶到四惡趣(apāyas)。你必須記住,將五蘊視為 「我」的凡夫才是最大的敵人。如果你首先根除渴愛,這就像首先殺死一個並 非敵人的人。知道如何消滅它,將會使你從敵人那裡解脫。將眾生帶到四惡趣

邪見是最可怕的敵人。如果你每次五蘊生起時都將其視為「我」,那麼常見(sassata)和斷見(uccheda)將會生起。

如果你首先消滅不應該首先被消滅的東西,那將會增加危險,否則,它將會使你從危險中解脫。在邪見的陪伴下,渴愛會將眾生隨意地送到三十一界的任何地方。從入流者到不還者,他們不會墮入惡趣,因為他們沒有錯誤的見解(他們仍然有一些形式的渴愛)。

如果你想要根除邪見,你必須了解你的五蘊的緣起(D.A.)過程。一個人或一個眾生的消失就是邪見的消失。如果你了解你的五蘊的緣起過程,你就是在消

滅邪見。有許多種類的心生起,不是一個人也不是一個眾生(尊者舉例說明)。 有許多種類的感受生起,不是一個人也不是一個眾生。

如果你了解從五蘊生起的現象,邪見將會脫落。你透過正念和智慧使其脫落。 邪見的脫落是第一步。觀照生起和滅去是第二步。如果你知道任何正在生起的, 其中沒有「我」的存在。這就是去除邪見。了解自己的心就是了解緣起過程。 如果你將任何正在生起的視為——這是「我」,這是「我」等等,邪見將會依 附於你。如果你的知識沒有與「我」的觀念混淆,那就足夠了。

不要害怕貪婪和憤怒。你必須害怕成為「我」的觀念。如果你說——「不要挑戰我」,那麼你的憤怒就變成了「你」。如果你說,「我想要擁有它」,那麼貪婪就變成了「我」的觀念。入流者仍然有貪婪和憤怒,但他們不會墮入惡趣。為什麼呢?因為他們內在沒有「我」的存在。

(尊者繼續講述《阿奴羅陀經》(Anurādha Sutta, SN 22.86),收錄於蘊相應)。為什麼會有三種不同的智慧(ñāṇas)?(這裡指的是無常、苦、無我三種智慧)。真實的存在只是生起和滅去的現象。這三種智慧在每個人的觀照中以不同的方式清晰地呈現。客體並沒有不同,但法只有一個一一無論五蘊中生起什麼,生起和滅去都是苦諦,了解它是道諦,渴愛不生起是集諦,而苦的止息是滅諦。它只有四聖諦。在這個過程中包含任何「我」的存在嗎?在這個過程中只有苦的生起和苦的止息存在。沒有人也沒有眾生在那裡。

阿奴羅陀比丘有錯誤的見解和疑惑,所以他無法回答外道信徒向他提出的問題。

The Poisonous Tree

5th July 1960

This body (khandha) is like a useless tree. In this case, what are you doing with it? It has diseases and is like a tree bearing poisonous fruits. You have to cut it down with three swords. These are the swords of samādhi, vipassanā, and magga. Therefore, the Buddha taught about samatha, vipassanā, and magga. Samādhi is the bark, vipassanā is the sapwood, and magga is the heartwood. Together, they can cut down the tree in stages. If you do not attain path knowledge, it'll grow back again. Sati, viriya, and samādhi are samatha. Samma-diṭṭhi and samma-saṅkappa are vipassanā. By combining them together, it becomes the five path factors. Contemplation is possible with samatha and vipassanā together. For example, when the mind desires to eat something, with observation; Is it there or not there? You'll find it is not there. If you find out its non-existence, it becomes the five path factors. Thus, it passes through the bark and cuts through the sapwood. Sati, viriya, and samādhi know the arising of phenomena. Samma-diṭṭhi and samma-saṅkappa know the vanishing of phenomena.

I am talking about it because it's very important. Every time you know the arising is samatha and know the vanishing is vipassanā. Initially, in contemplation, you find them sparsely; however, with more contemplation, you will find more. With samādhi and paññā becoming sharp, you only find the vanishing, which cuts through the sapwood, with only the heartwood left. Yuganaddha is the contemplation combining samatha and vipassanā together.

Diṭṭhi and taṇhā are interconnected. Taṇhā is like the heartwood. (Sayadaw says a lot about taṇhā).

[The above talk of the poisonous tree with its analogy appears to me as follows. The poisonous tree is like the apple tree in the Garden of Eden. Adam represents ignorance, and Eve represents craving. After eating the poisonous apple, they suffered birth, ageing, sickness, death, and other diseases as punishment, which was like being oppressed by the khandha tree, the outcome of clinging to the action of "**me** and **mine**."]

毒樹

1960年7月5日

這個身體(五蘊,khandha)就像一棵無用的樹。在這樣的情況下,你究竟還想拿它做什麼呢?

它充滿病痛,就像一棵結出**有毒果實**的樹。你必須用三把劍將它砍倒——這三 把劍就是:**定(samādhi)、****觀(vipassanā)**與**道智(magga)******之劍。

因此,佛陀才教授了三種修行:止(samatha)、觀(vipassanā)與道(magga)。

在這個譬喻中:

- **定(samādhi) **就像樹皮;
- **觀(vipassanā) **就像邊材;
- **道智(magga)**則是心材。

三者合力,便能分層次地砍倒這棵樹。

但若你尚未證得道智(magga ñāṇa),這棵樹還會再生長回來。

正念(sati)、精進(viriya)與正定(samādhi)屬於止修(samatha); 正見(sammā-diṭṭhi)與正思惟(sammā-saṅkappa)則是觀修(vipassanā)。

當這五者合一時,就形成五道支(五道分)。

要能真正觀察,必須是止與觀合修而生的觀照力。

舉例來說:當你的心起了想吃某物的念頭,此時加以觀察:「那個想吃的法,是實有的嗎?還是不存在?」

若你發現它並不存在,就代表你以道支的力量(magganga)正見到「無有」。 這就如同你的修行斧頭已穿透了樹皮,接著砍進了邊材。

在這裡,正念、精進與正定能夠知見「法的生起」; 而正見與正思惟則能知見「法的滅去」。 我今天講這個比喻,是因為它非常重要。

每一次你**知見「生起」**的時候,就是止修的運作; 每一次你**知見「滅去」**的時候,就是觀修的運作。

最初觀修時,你只能零星地見到生滅;但隨著修行日增,便會見得越來越多。

當**定與慧**愈來愈銳利時,你會**只見「滅去」**,不再見到「生起」; 這時你已經**砍穿了邊材,只剩下心材**尚未破除。

這種止與觀合修的方式,即名為瑜伽合修 (yuganaddha)。

邪見(diṭṭhi)與渴愛(taṇhā)是互相關聯的;

其中, 渴愛就像是心材, 也就是這棵毒樹的核心。

(尊者此處對渴愛作了深入開示。)

【備註:這段以「毒樹」為譬喻的法語,讓人聯想到《創世記》中伊甸園的蘋果樹。亞當象徵「無明」,夏娃象徵「渴愛」。當他們咬下那顆有毒的果實後,便受到了「生、老、病、死」等苦的懲罰,這就如同他們被五蘊之樹所壓迫——這棵樹正是他們對「我與我所」的執取所帶來的惡果。】

毒樹

一九六〇年七月五日

這個身體(五蘊)就像一棵無用的樹。既然如此,你還留著它做什麼呢?它充滿疾病,就像一棵結滿毒果的樹。你必須用三把劍砍倒它。這三把劍就是禪定

(samādhi)、內觀(vipassanā)和道(magga)。因此,佛陀教導了止(samatha)、觀(vipassanā)和道(magga)。禪定是樹皮,內觀是邊材,而道是心材。它們共同作用,可以階段性地砍倒這棵樹。如果你沒有證得道智,它就會再次生長出來。念(sati)、精進(viriya)和定(samādhi)是止。正見(samma-diṭṭhi)和正思惟(samma-saṅkappa)是觀。將它們結合在一起,就成為五道支。止和觀結合在一起才能進行觀照。例如,當心想吃某種東西時,透過觀察;它在那裡還是不在那裡?你會發現它不在那裡。如果你發現它的不存在,它就成為五道支。這樣,它穿過樹皮,切過邊材。念、精進和定知道現象的生起。正見和正思惟知道現象的滅去。

我之所以談論它,是因為它非常重要。每次你知道生起是止,知道滅去是觀。 最初,在觀照中,你發現它們很稀疏;然而,隨著更多的觀照,你會發現更多。 隨著禪定和智慧變得敏銳,你只會發現滅去,這會切過邊材,只留下心材。

止觀雙運(yuganaddha)是將止和觀結合在一起的觀照。邪見和渴愛是相互關聯的。渴愛就像心材。(尊者談了很多關於渴愛的內容)。

[以上關於毒樹及其比喻的談話,在我看來如下:毒樹就像伊甸園裡的蘋果樹。 亞當代表無明,而夏娃代表渴愛。在吃了毒蘋果後,他們遭受了出生、衰老、 疾病、死亡和其他疾病作為懲罰,這就像被五蘊之樹所壓迫,是執著於「我」 和「我的」行為的結果。]

Ditthi and Apāyas

(wrong views and woeful existences)

27th, 28th May and 2nd June 1960

There're six phenomena leading to woeful existences (apāyas). These are — diṭṭhi, vicikicchā, sīlabbata-parāmāsa (clinging to wrong practices), lobha with diṭṭhi, dosa with diṭṭhi, and moha with diṭṭhi.

There is no other thing more important than the extermination of diṭṭhi. You have to know about this point early. Diṭṭhi arises from not knowing about the five khandhas. You all have to look for a teacher who is able to teach you about them. With his knowledge, the Buddha observes humans and finds out that hundreds of thousands of human beings die and no one is reborn at good destinations (sugati). That is from the Saṃyutta Nikāya. What he found out is that with the cause of diṭṭhi, beings fall into apāya existences.

In the Dhammapada, the Buddha teaches that people who are heedless to anicca, the four apāya bhūmis are their permanent homes. A stone normally stays on the ground, but if someone throws it up, it goes up for a short period, and after that, it falls down again. The life of living beings is in the same way. Why is that? Because the whole day, people are identifying themselves as "this is mine, this I am, and this is myself." They're always living with diṭṭhi. From the six sense doors, only diṭṭhi, taṇhā, upādāna, and kamma are arising.

There are countless kammas leading to apāyas throughout the whole day. Originally (mostly), they come from apāyas, and after arriving here, they're collecting diṭṭhi kammas that lead to apāyas again. Where's diṭṭhi coming from? It comes from not knowing about the khandha. If diṭṭhi arises, then taṇhā, upādāna, and kamma also arise. For someone with diṭṭhi intact, the cauldron is waiting for him/her. (For this point, Sayadaw gives the example of Upāsaka Nandiya who made merits and had heavenly mansions appear in heaven with celestial nymphs waiting for him).

The ultimate reality of phenomena is correct and unchanging. You have to catch on to anicca when feeling arises. Ditthi falls away by knowing it as feeling. Ditthi also falls away by discerning anicca (rise and fall) [The first one is identity and the 2nd one is sassata and uccheda.] Knowing rise and fall becomes knowledge

(vijjā). Therefore, ignorance also falls away. Knowing about feeling and its rise and fall by contemplation, the D.A. process is cut off in the beginning and the middle. This is contemplating with the five path factors but not including the sīla factors, because it is not complete yet. It's still contemplation as a worldling.

The Buddha mentioned to the monks that he used to teach the true Dhamma to them correctly for once. If he taught them about the development of insight 1,972 times throughout his life, it means it is a very important matter. Obtaining this khandha and obtaining it again in the future is the greatest fault. There are five javana minds (i.e., active phase of the cognitive process) that arise near death.

And then the cuti mind arises (i.e., the last mind moment at the time of death). This is the last mind of this present life. The dying person has to abandon this life's khandha. The new khandha starts to arise. This is birth $-j\bar{a}ti$. The dying person sees the mental images (nimittas) from the first mind to the 5^{th} mind. He sees these before death and doesn't have time to correct the nimittas. Therefore, the practising of vipassanā is one's own matter.

Therefore, the Buddha exhorts us to practice 1792 times in his 45 years of teaching. Some people are crying near death, with tears flowing down their faces, because they are seeing the dugati nimittas (bad destinations – such as hell, ghost, animal realms). How terrible is that? This is not an ordinary matter, but the most important matter. Therefore, don't give any excuses and reasons for your practice. If you say "I have no time" it means you don't have any sympathy for yourself.

Some Reflections

If we never study the Buddha Dhamma, we will never know the dangers of samsāra while carrying with us the latent defilements of the three unwholesome roots – greed, hatred, and delusion, along with its other companions. The untrained mind mostly inclines toward unwholesome dhammas. Most ordinary Buddhists do not know the dangers and its consequences of Ditthi. For worldlings, there are only two kinds of kamma – unwholesome and wholesome. Throughout their whole day and whole life, all their actions (mental, speech, and body) are of these two kinds, mostly the negative ones. This happens to world leaders, politicians, economists, scientists, etc. If we do not study the Buddha's teachings, apply it in daily life, and practice the

noble eightfold path, the frequent homes of all worldlings will be the four apāyas. This is not an exaggeration. We can check ourselves with the standard law of the D.A. process. The Buddha also warns us.

A student asks a teacher, "Do we have any chances of going between the unwholesome and the wholesome?" The answer is, "No, you don't have one." It is like a person who has no experience walking on a tight rope; he is bound to fall to the left or right. The straight line of the rope is like the Buddha's middle way. The left and right are the negative (wrong practices) and positive (sensual pleasures) ways. Not creating any negative or positive kammas is possible only for an arahant.

The Buddha also warns and exhorts that wrong view leads to the arising and increase of unwholesome qualities, and in the same way, right view leads to the arising and increase of wholesome qualities. Therefore, wrong views lead to dangers, destruction, and sufferings, while right views lead to the opposite results.

Why do so many sufferings and problems arise in this 21st century? The answer is quite clear. Some leaders and governments struggle for power and wealth, with both sides killing and harming a lot of citizens. A superpower's arms industries and businesses are not only killing their own citizens, but also creating crimes, drugs, and violence in its neighbouring countries. These countries then smuggle narcotics and drugs back to the superpower, whose government admits the great harm affecting their citizens. Among the deaths of people, 40% are related to these poisonous drugs. This is karmic retribution.

Right views, right thoughts, and right actions are related to wisdom — right knowledge. Wrong views, wrong thoughts, and actions are related to ignorance — wrong knowledge. Therefore, generally, humans live their lives driven by greed, hatred, and delusion. Without the Buddha Dhamma, humans do not have the right knowledge to follow the right path.

邪見與惡趣(Diţthi and Apāyas)

1960年5月27日、28日與6月2日

導致墮入惡趣(apāya)的現象共有六種:

- 1. 邪見(ditthi)、
- 2. 疑 (vicikicchā)、
- 3. 戒禁取(sīlabbata-parāmāsa)——執著於錯誤的修行方式、
- 4. 伴隨邪見的貪(lobha with ditthi)、
- 5. 伴隨邪見的瞋(dosa with ditthi)、
- 6. 伴隨邪見的癡 (moha with ditthi)。

沒有任何事情比**斷除邪見**更加重要。這一點,你必須儘早明白。**邪見之所以生起,是因為不了解五蘊(khandha)**。

你們每個人都應該去尋找一位能正確教授五蘊之法的善知識。

佛陀以祂的智慧觀察人類後,發現有成千上萬的人死亡後無一人能往生善趣 (sugati)——這段出自《相應部》。佛陀所發現的關鍵即是:因為邪見的存在, 眾生才會隨入惡趣。

在《法句經》中,佛陀開示:

凡對無常(anicca)缺乏正念與警覺者,四惡趣便成為他們的長久住處。

就像石頭自然會停留在地面上,但若有人將它拋向空中,它僅會在空中停留片刻,隨即又會墜落下來——眾生的命運亦復如是。

為什麼會如此?因為眾生終日都在心中認定:「**這是我的、這是我、這是我自己。**」他們始終活在邪見之中。

在六根門當中,生起的僅是:邪見(diṭṭhi)、貪愛(taṇhā)、執取(upādāna)與業(kamma)。

一天之中,有無數個「導向惡趣」的業在持續造作。眾生大多是從惡趣而來, 而來到人間後,又再造作導致惡趣的「邪見業」。

那麼,邪見從何而來?——它來自於不了解五蘊。

當邪見生起時,**貪愛、執取與造業**也就隨之生起。對於仍存有邪見的人而言,**煉獄之鍋已經在等著他了。**

(關於此點,尊者舉了優婆塞難提耶 Upāsaka Nandiya 的例子:他修福業,天界已為他備妥了天宮與天女作為果報。)

究竟法是真實且不變的。

當「受」生起時,你必須即刻捕捉其「無常」特性。

若你能如實知「這只是受」,**邪見便會退散**;若你能觀察其生滅,**邪見也會退** 散。

(前者是針對「我見」的破除;後者則破除「常見與斷見」)

知見「生滅」便是智慧 (vijjā),同時也是無明的滅除。

若你能觀照「受」及其生滅,便能**從起始處與中段切斷緣起流(D.A.** process)。

這種觀照是透過五道支進行的(不包括戒支,因為尚未具足圓滿),仍屬於**凡 夫位的觀行**。

佛陀對比丘們說:**我只需要一次正確地傳授你們真實的法(saddhamma)即可。**如果佛陀一生之中曾一千九百七十二次教導「觀智的發展」,那就表示:這件事極其重要。

今生得此五蘊,來世又再得五蘊,這正是最大的過失。

臨終時,五個速行心(javana)會先行生起,之後生起「死心(cuti citta)」——即此生的最後一剎那。

臨終者必須捨棄此生之五蘊,並接著生起新的五蘊——這即是「生」(jāti)。

臨終者會在最後五個速行心之間看到種種心影(nimitta)。

但在那短暫剎那中,他來不及修正那些惡趣影像。因此,**是否修習內觀** (vipassanā),將決定你自己的命運。

因此,佛陀在四十五年教法中**勸誡弟子修行共一千七百九十二次**。

有些人在臨終時哭泣、淚流滿面,因為他們看見了「惡趣影像(dugati nimitta)」,即地獄、鬼界、畜生等境相。

這是多麼可怕的事!這絕非普通的事,而是最重要的事!

因此,千萬不要找任何藉口來逃避修行。

若你說:「我沒有時間」,那就表示你對自己根本沒有慈悲心。

一些省思

如果我們從未學習過佛陀的法(Buddha Dhamma),就永遠無法認識輪迴的可怕與三毒(貪、瞋、癡)所潛伏帶來的巨大危險。

未受訓練的心,往往傾向於非善法(akusala dhammas)。

多數平凡佛教徒甚至不明白邪見的危害與後果。

對凡夫而言,他們的業只有兩種:善業與不善業。

他們一整天、甚至一生所作所為(無論是身、語、意行)都離不開這兩者,**其**中又以惡業佔多數。

這不僅是平民的問題,也發生在國家領袖、政治人物、經濟學家與科學家身上。 如果我們不學佛法、不將其應用於生活中、不修習八正道,那麼,**所有凡夫的 常住處將是四惡趣**——這不是誇張,而是真實。

我們可以用緣起法則自行檢驗。佛陀亦已反覆警示。

有學生問老師:「我們是否有可能在善與不善之間取得平衡?」

老師的回答是:「不,你沒有那個可能。」

這就像一個毫無經驗的人試圖走鋼索——他一定會向左或右跌倒。

鋼索的正中央就像佛陀的**中道(Majjhimā Paṭipadā)**; 左邊是錯誤的苦行,右邊是咸官的沉迷。

唯有阿羅漢才能做到不造善不造惡。

佛陀再三警示:

邪見導致不善法的生起與增長;正見則導致善法的生起與增長。

因此:

- 邪見導致危險、毀滅與苦果;
- 正見導致解脫、平安與善果。

為何二十一世紀出現如此多的苦難與問題?原因非常清楚:

- 一些領袖與政權為了權力與財富而爭鬥,導致雙方大肆殺戮與傷害人民。
- 一個超級強國的軍火產業與經濟不僅導致本國人民的死亡,還助長了鄰國的犯罪、毒品與暴力。

那些國家之後又將毒品走私回該超級強國,其政府也承認這些毒品對其人民造成了重大傷害。

現今約有四成的人口死亡與毒品有關——這是業報。

正見、正思惟與正行為是與智慧(paññā)與正知(vijjā)相應; 邪見、邪思惟與邪行為則與無明(avijjā)與錯誤知見相關。

總的來說,人類仍是被貪、瞋、癡所驅使地過活。

若無佛法的導引,人類將無從獲得正知,亦無法走上正道。

邪見與惡趣 (錯誤的見解與苦難的存在)

一九六〇年五月二十七日、二十八日及六月二日

有六種現象會導致惡趣(apāyas)。這些是——邪見(diṭṭhi)、疑 (vicikicchā)、戒禁取(sīlabbata-parāmāsa,執著於錯誤的修行)、與邪見相 應的貪(lobha)、與邪見相應的瞋(dosa),以及與邪見相應的癡(moha)。

沒有比根除邪見更重要的事情了。你們必須及早了解這一點。邪見的產生源於不了解五蘊。你們都必須尋找一位能夠教導你們五蘊的老師。憑藉他的智慧,佛陀觀察人類,發現成千上萬的人死亡,卻沒有人轉生到善趣(sugati)。這出自《相應部》(Saṃyutta Nikāya)。他發現,由於邪見的緣故,眾生墮入惡趣。

在《法句經》(Dhammapada)中,佛陀教導說,那些對無常掉以輕心的人,四惡趣將是他們永久的家。石頭通常留在地上,但如果有人將它向上拋,它會在空中停留一段短暫的時間,之後又會掉落下來。眾生的生命也是如此。為什麼呢?因為整天,人們都將自己視為「這是我的,這是我,這是我的自我。」他們總是活在邪見之中。從六根門,只有邪見、渴愛(taṇhā)、執取(upādāna)和業(kamma)在生起。

整天都有無數導致惡趣的業。最初(大多數情況下),它們來自惡趣,而來到這裡之後,它們又積累了導致再次墮入惡趣的邪見之業。邪見從何而來?它來自於不了解五蘊。如果邪見生起,那麼渴愛、執取和業也會隨之生起。對於邪見完好無損的人來說,鑊湯地獄正等待著他/她。(關於這一點,尊者舉了優婆塞難提耶的例子,他行善積德,在天界出現了天宮,並有天女等待著他)。

現象的終極實相是正確且不變的。當感受生起時,你們必須抓住無常。透過了解它是感受,邪見便會脫落。透過辨識無常(生起和滅去),邪見也會脫落[第一個是身份認同,第二個是常見和斷見]。了解生起和滅去會成為智慧(vijjā)。因此,無明也會脫落。透過觀照了解感受及其生起和滅去,緣起(D.A.)的過程會在開始和中間被切斷。這是以五道支進行觀照,但不包括戒(sīla)的因素,因為它還不完整。這仍然是凡夫的觀照。

佛陀曾向比丘們提到,他曾經正確地向他們教導過一次真正的佛法。如果他一生中教導他們內觀的發展達一千九百七十二次,這意味著這是一件非常重要的事情。獲得這個五蘊,以及未來再次獲得它,是最大的過失。臨終時會生起五個速行心(javana,即認知過程的活躍階段)。然後會生起死亡心(cuti-citta,即死亡時的最後一念)。這是今生的最後一念。臨終之人必須捨棄今生的五蘊。新的五蘊開始生起。這就是生(jāti)。臨終之人從第一念到第五念看到心識影像(nimittas)。他在死亡之前看到這些,沒有時間糾正這些影像。因此,修習內觀是個人的事情。

因此,佛陀在他四十五年的教學生涯中,勸勉我們修行一千七百九十二次。有些人臨終時哭泣,淚流滿面,因為他們看到惡趣的徵兆(dugati nimittas——例如地獄、餓鬼、畜生道)。那是多麼可怕啊!

這不是一件普通的事情,而是最重要的事情。因此,不要為你的修行找任何藉口和理由。如果你說「我沒有時間」,這意味著你對自己沒有任何同情心。

一些反思

如果我們從未學習佛陀的教法,我們將永遠不知道輪迴的危險,同時攜帶著三不善根——貪、瞋、癡及其它隨煩惱的潛在染污。未經訓練的心大多傾向於不善法。大多數普通的佛教徒並不知道邪見的危險及其後果。對於凡夫來說,只有兩種業——不善業和善業。他們整天和一生中,所有的行為(身、語、意)都屬於這兩種,而且大多是不善的。世界領袖、政治家、經濟學家、科學家等等也是如此。如果我們不學習佛陀的教導,不將其應用於日常生活,不修習八正道,所有凡夫經常居住的地方將是四惡趣。這並非誇大其詞。我們可以根據緣起過程的標準法則來檢視自己。佛陀也警告我們。

一個學生問老師:「我們有在不善和善之間遊走的機會嗎?」答案是:「不,你沒有。」這就像一個沒有走鋼絲經驗的人;他必然會向左或向右掉下去。繩子的直線就像佛陀的中道。左和右分別是不善(錯誤的修行)和善(感官的快樂)的道路。不造作任何不善或善的業,只有阿羅漢才有可能做到。

佛陀也警告並勸勉說,邪見導致不善法的生起和增長,同樣地,正見導致善法的生起和增長。因此,邪見導致危險、毀滅和痛苦,而正見則導致相反的結果。

為什麼在二十一世紀會出現如此多的苦難和問題?答案很清楚。一些領導人和 政府為了權力和財富而鬥爭,雙方都殺害和傷害了許多公民。一個超級大國的 軍火工業和企業不僅殺害自己的公民,還在其鄰國製造犯罪、毒品和暴力。這 些國家然後將麻醉品和毒品走私回這個超級大國,其政府承認這對他們的公民 造成了巨大的傷害。在死亡的人口中,百分之四十與這些有毒的毒品有關。這 是業報。

正見、正思惟和正業與智慧——正知有關。邪見、邪思惟和邪業與無明——邪知有關。因此,一般來說,人類的生活受到貪、瞋、癡的驅使。沒有佛陀的教法,人類就沒有正確的知識來遵循正道。

The Paths of Action and Knowledge

8th October 1960

(Tell the story of Rohitassa Devatā) Only with knowledge can one arrive at the end of the world. One can arrive at Nibbāna with good knowledge (ñāṇa), not by good kamma. Nibbāna is the path of knowledge. The thirty-one realms of existence are the path of kamma. There are three paths: kamma, jhāna, and ñāṇa. The kamma path is the far cause of Nibbāna. The jhāna path is the near cause. The ñāṇa path is what arrives at Nibbāna and sends you there. You have to walk on the two arm's length of Khandha with the path factors of knowledge. You use one of the four satipaṭṭhāna based on your preference. If your knowledge fits in with feeling, then go with feeling. You must follow with ñāṇa on the arising and vanishing of saṅkhāra loka (conditioned mind and form). You should take it as a vipassanā task.

The Buddha teaches that there are four truths in the khandha. Aside from lobha, mind and form are dukkha sacca. With no lobha, no dukkha exists. Therefore, I am asking you, does the khandha disappear? (the ending of rise and fall). By observing loka (mind and form), it will tell you, "I am dukkha sacca." Khandha is the teller and ñāṇa is the onlooker. If there is no more telling you will see the end of the khandha. This is Nibbāna. Birth and death, birth and death, etc. are loka (arising and vanishing, arising dukkha and vanishing dukkha). You have to note that in loka you will not see happiness. If you ask, "How long do I have to practice?" If your kilesa is thick, it will take a long time; with less kilesa, it will take less time. You can even attain it within seven days (e.g., Soon Loon Sayadaw's disciple U Manisara).

You have to increase your confidence, samādhi, and energy. An ordinary sāvaka does not need pāramīs. He needs to listen to sacca dhamma and practice to see the truth (i.e., arising and vanishing of dukkha). Birth is dukkha, living is dukkha, and dying is dukkha. Except for dukkha arising and dukkha ceasing, there is nothing else that exists.

There's nothing that exists except dukkha sacca. At the time when you can make the decision thoroughly and see it as real dukkha, dukkha will end. The khandha will disappear. Khandha dukkha disappears under the influence of ñāṇa. Therefore, Nibbāna exists at the end of the khandha. If you follow the process, it'll come to an end.

With good kammas, heavenly mansions arise; and with good jhānas, samatha nimittas arise; and with good ñāṇa, Nibbāna will arise.

行與智之道

1960年10月8日

(講述羅希多沙天神的故事)

唯有智慧(ñāṇa),才能達至世界的終點(即究竟苦滅)。你不能藉由善業(kamma)而達到涅槃,只能藉由正智而至。

涅槃是智慧之道(ñāṇa-magga),而三十一界則是業之道(kamma-magga)。

- 一切存在有三條道路:
 - 1. **業之道 (kamma path)** ——遠因;
 - 2. **禪那之道(jhāna path**)——近因;
 - 3. 智慧之道(ñāṇa path)——能達至涅槃之真正道。

你必須在自身一**臂長的五蘊之地**上,依照**道支智慧(magga-ñāṇa)**來行走。 你可依四念處中的任一處所,選擇適合你的觀法;

若你的智慧適合於「受」,那就從「受」下手;

你必須以**智慧觀照**一切**緣起世間(saṅkhāra-loka)**的生與滅(名色的生滅)。

這應被視為**毘婆舍那的觀行任務(vipassanā kicca)**。

佛陀曾開示:**在這個「五蘊」中,有四聖諦的存在。**

除了貪(lobha)之外,名與色都是**苦諦(dukkha sacca)**;若無貪愛,就無有苦。

那麼我問你:這個五蘊是否會消失?(亦即生滅的終結)

當你觀察世間(loka,即名與色)時,它會對你說:「我是苦諦!」

五蘊是說話者(teller),而**智慧(ñāṇa)**是觀察者(onlooker)。

當「說話」停止之時,你便見到了五蘊的終結——這就是涅槃(Nibbāna)。

生與死、生與死,這一切都是「世間」(loka)的現象:即生起之苦與滅去之苦。

你必須注意:**在這個世間裡,你不會見到快樂**。

若你問:「我到底要修多久?」——若你的煩惱深厚,那就會花很久時間;若 煩惱淺薄,就會快些。

甚至有些人七天內即可證得(如順倫禪師的弟子 U Manisara 所示)。

你必須增長信心(saddhā)、定力(samādhi)與精進(viriya)。

一位平常的聲聞弟子(sāvaka)不一定需要累積過去世的大波羅蜜; 他只需**聽聞四聖諦法(sacca dhamma)**,並實踐以見其真相——即**苦的生起與滅去**。

出生是苦;活著是苦;死亡亦是苦。

除了苦的生起與苦的止息之外,並無其他真實法存在。

一切存在,皆是**苦諦 (dukkha sacca)**。

當你徹底地斷定並見證這一切為真實的苦時,苦便會止息。

五蘊之苦(khandha-dukkha)會在智慧的主導下滅除。

因此,涅槃是在五蘊終結之處顯現的。

若造作善業,則得天宮等福報; 若修習禪定,則得止修光明之相; 但唯有修習智慧,**涅槃才會顯現**。

行為之道與智慧之道

一九六〇年十月八日

(講述羅醯多娑天子的故事)

只有透過智慧才能到達世界的盡頭。只有透過好的智慧(ñāṇa),而不是透過好的業(kamma),才能到達涅槃。涅槃是智慧之道。三十一界是業之道。有三條道路:業道、禪那道和智慧道。業道是涅槃的遠因。禪那道是近因。智慧道是到達涅槃並將你送往那裡的道路。你必須以智慧的道支行走在兩臂長的五蘊之上。你可以根據自己的偏好使用四念處中的任何一個。如果你的智慧與感受相契合,那就從感受入手。你必須以智慧隨觀有為世間(saṅkhāra loka,有條件的心和色)的生起和滅去。你應該將其視為一項內觀的任務。

佛陀教導說,五蘊中有四聖諦。除了貪(lobha)之外,名色(mind and form)是苦諦。沒有貪,就沒有苦的存在。因此,我問你們,五蘊會消失嗎?(生起和滅去的終結)。透過觀察世間(名色),它會告訴你:「我是苦諦。」五蘊是講述者,而智慧是觀察者。如果不再有講述,你將會看到五蘊的終結。這就是涅槃。生與死,生與死等等,都是世間(生起和滅去,生起之苦和滅去之苦)。你必須注意到,在世間你不會看到快樂。如果你問:「我必須修行多久?」如果你的煩惱(kilesa)深厚,那將需要很長時間;如果煩惱較少,那將

需要較少的時間。你甚至可以在七天內證得(例如,孫倫尊者的弟子伍馬尼沙拉)。

你必須增強你的信心、禪定和精進。一個普通的聲聞弟子不需要波羅蜜。他需要聽聞真實的佛法(sacca dhamma)並修行以見到真理(即苦的生起和滅去)。生是苦,活是苦,死是苦。除了苦的生起和苦的滅去之外,沒有其他存在。除了苦諦之外,沒有任何存在。當你能夠徹底做出決定並將其視為真實的苦時,苦就會終結。五蘊將會消失。五蘊之苦在智慧的影響下消失。因此,涅槃存在於五蘊的盡頭。如果你遵循這個過程,它將會結束。

透過好的業,天宮會生起;透過好的禪那,止的相(samatha nimittas)會生起; 而透過好的智慧,涅槃將會生起。

With Little Pleasure And Too Much Dukkha

5th October 1960

Sensual pleasures have little pleasure but bring too much suffering. The Buddha teaches about the killing of craving. Craving is never satisfied and always gives you dukkha. You're doing things that never bring satisfaction and you suffer wherever kamma sends you (i.e., refer to D.A process). Only the four apāya khandhas will appear, which are actions done with an unwholesome mind. Is there anything that leads to sugati and Nibbāna? This happens because there is never enough clinging and action. This is the power of craving, which is indeed a very bad dhamma. You can't abandon it until it burns you to death. (Sayadaw gives the simile of a blazing grass torch for craving: Craving is like grasping the blazing fire tightly. Even with the burning and not letting it go, is there anything more foolish than that? You're foolishly holding on while burning. Only a crazy man holds on to a burning thing. A corpse burned to death will go to apāya.

Why is that? Because one is dying in a serious way. First, don't go and hold it; but if you have already held it, then throw it away. You all are already holding on with sons and daughters; but if you let them go, you can still be freed. Throw them away with knowledge. If you don't correct your first foolish fault of holding on to it and your second foolish fault of not throwing it away, you will encounter your third foolish fault of burning with kilesa fire and falling into apāyas.

Observe everything with the knowledge of non-self. If you know that they are not good to hold on to, this is vipassanā contemplation. Contemplate insight into the external phenomena and also into yourself. By not holding on to them with taṇhā, upādāna, and kamma, samudaya ceases. With the cessation of samudaya, the later arising of all dukkhas also ceases.

樂少而苦多

1960年10月5日

欲樂所帶來的快樂極少,但苦卻極多。

佛陀所教導的是:應滅盡渴愛(tanhā)。

渴愛永遠不知足,且無時不刻都在帶來苦。

你所做的事,從未真正帶來滿足,而你也總是在「業(kamma)所導引之處」 受苦——也就是根據**緣起支(D.A. process)**所顯示的結果。

因此,只會出現導向四惡趣的五蘊(apāya khandhas),這些都是以**不善心**所造作的行為之果。

那麼,有什麼東西能導向善趣(sugati)與涅槃嗎?

這一切都是因為永遠不滿足的執取與造作。這就是**渴愛的力量**,這種法,實在 是非常惡劣的法。

你無法捨棄它,直到它將你「燒死」為止。

(尊者此處舉了比喻)

渴愛就像是一把**燃燒著的火把**——

你緊握著它,即使它正在燒灼你,你也不放手。

請問,有沒有比這更愚癡的行為?

你正是愚癡地執取著它,一邊燃燒著自己。

只有瘋子才會緊握著燃燒的東西不放。

這樣被燒死的屍體,將墮入惡趣(apāya)。

為什麼會如此?因為此人以「極其危險」的方式死亡。

第一個愚癡的錯誤,是你不該去抓它,卻去抓了;

第二個愚癡的錯誤,是既然已抓住它,卻又不願放下;

於是你就會遭遇到第三個愚癡的錯誤:被煩惱之火焚燒,墮入惡趣。

你應該以**「無我智慧」去觀察一切事物**。

若你能知道這些東西「並不值得執取」,這就是**毘婆舍那(vipassanā)的觀行**。 你應觀照外在現象,也應觀照自己的內在身心。

當你不再以貪愛(taṇhā)、執取(upādāna)與造業(kamma)來執取它們時, 集諦(samudaya)便會止息。

而當集諦止息後,一切隨之而來的苦諦(dukkha)也將不再生起。

少樂多苦

一九六〇年十月五日

感官的快樂少之又少,卻帶來太多的痛苦。佛陀教導關於滅除渴愛。渴愛從不滿足,總是帶給你苦。你所做的事情從不帶來滿足,並且無論業將你送到哪裡,你都會受苦(即參考緣起過程)。只會出現四惡趣的五蘊,這些都是以不善心所造作的行為。有什麼能導向善趣和涅槃嗎?這是因為執取和行為從來沒有足夠的時候。這就是渴愛的力量,它確實是非常惡劣的法。你無法捨棄它,直到它將你燒死。

(尊者用燃燒的草炬來比喻渴愛:渴愛就像緊緊抓住熊熊烈火。即使被燒傷也不放手,還有比這更愚蠢的嗎?你愚蠢地緊抓著燃燒的東西。只有瘋子才會抓住燃燒的東西。被燒死的屍體將會墮入惡趣。為什麼呢?因為一個人正以嚴重的方式死去。首先,不要去抓住它;但如果你已經抓住了,那就把它扔掉。你們都已經緊緊抓住兒女不放;但如果你們放手,仍然可以獲得自由。用智慧將他們拋開。如果你們不改正你們第一個愚蠢的錯誤——抓住它,以及第二個愚蠢的錯誤——不把它扔掉,你們將會遭遇你們第三個愚蠢的錯誤——被煩惱之火燒傷並墮入惡趣。

以無我的智慧觀察一切。如果你知道它們不值得執著,這就是內觀的觀照。觀 照對外在現象以及對你自身的洞察力。透過不以渴愛、執取和業來執著它們, 集(samudaya)便會止息。隨著集的止息,所有後續生起的苦也將止息。

Deceiving by The Mind

8th September 1961

With an ordinary eye, you look at a person as ugly, pretty, fat, thin, etc. When using the ñāṇa eye, you have to close the ordinary eyes and look at the objects. You can't find the colours such as white, red, blue, etc. What you see is the sensations here and there. In ñāṇa experiences, personhood and being disappear. The sense door is accurate (here the eye door), but it is deceived by the mind. The eyes only detect the colour. Following minds of lobha, dosa, upāyāsa, etc. cause paṭiccasamuppāda dhammas to arise, but these are deceiving minds. They send beings (humans) to apāyas. Through the mind, one can be happy and arrive at Nibbāna. The mind can bring both good results and bad results.

Resultant minds (vipāka citta) are true (i.e., seeing, hearing, smelling, etc.), but vīthicitta — consciousness belonging to a cognitive process — is not true (i.e., the minds that follow behind the vipāka cittas). It doesn't matter whether you are seeing the colour or knowing the colour (seeing is the eye-consciousness, and knowing is mind-consciousness). You all are happy with the deceiving dhammas, by making the phenomena appear as man, woman, etc., and so you fall into apāyas.

心之欺瞞

1961年9月8日

以**凡夫之眼**(俗眼)觀人時,你會看到對方是「醜的、美的、胖的、瘦的」等等;

但若以**智慧之眼(ñāṇa-cakkhu)觀察時,就必須關閉凡夫之眼**,再去觀所緣對象。

此時你將無法再見到所謂的「白色、紅色、藍色」等色彩; 你所見到的,只是此處與彼處的**感受現象(受、觸等)**。

當智慧經驗(ñāṇa-paccanubhava)生起時,人相與眾生相便會消失。

六根門本身是**正確的根(sense base)**,如「眼根」即能真實見色;但錯就錯在——**它被「心」欺騙了**。

眼根只負責見色;然而後續跟隨而來的種種心——如貪心(lobha)、瞋心(dosa)、焦惱心(upāyāsa)——便使**緣起法(paṭiccasamuppāda dhamma)**生起。

然而,這些跟隨而來的心,正是欺騙的心(vīthi citta)。

正是它們將眾生推向惡趣(apāya)。

但透過「心」,人也能體驗快樂,乃至抵達涅槃;

因此,心既能導向善果,也能導向惡果。

果報心(vipāka citta)是真實的——如眼識、耳識、鼻識等(即見、聞、嗅等)是因果自然反應;

但**隨之而起的「過程心(vīthi citta)」**,就不是真實的。

無論你是在「見色」或「知色」:

- 見色是眼識(cakkhu-viññāṇa),
- 知色是意識(mano-viññāṇa),

而你們卻喜歡與這些**欺瞞法(vibbhanta dhamma)**相處,讓它們裝成是「男人、女人」等等,

於是就這樣——**墮入惡趣**(apāya)。

被心所欺騙

一九六一年九月八日

以肉眼觀看,你會覺得一個人是醜陋、美麗、肥胖、瘦小等等。當使用智慧之眼(ñāṇa eye)時,你必須閉上肉眼,觀察對象。你找不到白色、紅色、藍色等等顏色。你所看到的是這裡那裡的感受。在智慧的體驗中,人性和眾生相都會消失。

感官之門是準確的(這裡指的是眼門),但它被心所欺騙。眼睛只偵測到顏色。 隨後的貪、瞋、憂惱等心,會導致緣起法(paţiccasamuppāda dhammas)的生起, 但這些都是欺騙的心。它們將眾生(人類)送往惡趣。透過心,一個人可以快 樂並到達涅槃。心既能帶來好的結果,也能帶來壞的結果。

果報心(vipāka citta)是真實的(即看、聽、聞等等),但意門心路過程之心(vīthicitta)——屬於認知過程的意識——是不真實的(即跟隨在果報心之後的心)。無論你是看到顏色還是知道顏色(看是眼識,知道是意識),都沒有關係。你們都對這些欺騙的法感到快樂,將現象呈現為男人、女人等等,因此你們會墮入惡趣。

Contemplation of Mind

11th October 1961

Five external guest minds

- 1. seeing consciousness
- 2. hearing consciousness
- 3. smelling consciousness
- 4. tasting consciousness
- 5. bodily consciousness

Bodily consciousness has two types: unpleasant and pleasant experiences.

Six internal guest minds:

- 6. greed
- 7. anger
- 8. delusion
- 9. non-greed
- 10. non-anger
- 11. thinking mind

Two host minds:

- 12. breathing in mind
- 13. breathing out mind

For a worldling, there are only 37 minds that arise for contemplation (see the Abhidhamma). They'll arise in turn. Contemplate the preceding mind with the following ñāṇa. What will happen? For example, the wanting to eat mind arises.

Its life span only has \odot and \odot . At \odot it arises, and at \odot it dies (vanishes). Therefore, it exists as arising and vanishing. You have to follow the arising with the five path factors (i.e., samādhi and paññā). You have to follow the non-existing mind with knowledge. This is where the five path factors appear. Right view is right seeing. Right thought is exposing the object for observation. Mindfulness is being careful of whatever arises. Samādhi is staying with the object. Viriya is making effort on the object. The arising mind will tell you - I am anicca. At the time when you are contemplating it, it'll tell you - I have died. You have to follow it with ñāṇa in your heart. These phenomena will tell you anicca, dukkha, anatta, and dukkha sacca. The contemplative five path factors are seeing it. If there's no mind, you'll die. Therefore, the minds are always arising one after another. You only have to observe them with contemplative knowledge.

The arising minds are aniccas, and the contemplative mind is magga. Therefore, contemplative knowledge is anicca-ñāṇa, dukkha-ñāṇa, anatta-ñāṇa, and dukkha-sacca-ñāṇa respectively. ① is contemplating objects and ② is the contemplative mind. If you can practice and let ① and ② fit together, by practicing in the morning, you'll attain Dhamma in the evening. ① has already arisen. If ② is a little late for contemplation, it means between the two minds, other minds have already arisen. Then you become aware and the contemplation misses the first object. For example, after three minds arise, there are three minds between them (you miss two of them). And then according to the Buddha, progressing from the five path factors to complete eight path factors will become slow.

The five path factors are mundane knowledge, and the eight path factors are supramundane knowledge. Kilesa coming in between the contemplation is the biggest enemy. If you do not contemplate with insight, only defilements arise. Even with the practice, defilements still come in between the practice. Defilements are the evil one (Mara).

(Sayadaw recites the 10 kilesas of Mara). It doesn't take long to complete the eight path factors and become a stream enterer if no kilesas come in. The knowledge of arising and vanishing phenomena is gained with the five path factors. This is vipassanā magga. The 13 kinds of mind will arise in turn. You have to contemplate without missing anything that arises.

In the beginning, you contemplate the mind wanting to breathe in and out (not the sensations). (Sayadaw explains the way of practice with the simile of a spider). If defilements do not come in between the practice, even half an hour of practice can help you realize Dhamma. You have to practice firmly. Contemplate the anicca of these 13 kinds of mind and anything else that arises. If there is nothing, return to the host minds (i.e., breathe in and out minds). Practicing vipassanā frees you from the three vaṭṭas (see the D.A Chart). Without practice, one is going to apāyas at any time. It's terrible. If you have sympathy for yourself, you must practice. If you are only feeding the body and looking after it, you have no pity on yourself.

觀心

1961年10月11日

五種外在的「客心」(外客心):

- 1. 見心(眼識)
- 2. 聞心 (耳識)
- 3. 嗅心(鼻識)
- 4. 嚐心 (舌識)
- 5. 觸心(身識)

其中「觸心」又可分為兩種:

- 苦受(不悅觸)
- 樂受(愉悅觸)

六種內在的「客心」(內客心):

- 6. 貪心 (lobha)
- 7. 瞋心 (dosa)
- 8. 癡心 (moha)
- 9. 無貪心 (alobha)
- 10. 無瞋心 (adosa)
- 11. 思心(思惟心)

兩種「主心」:

- 12. 入息心 (呼吸入)
- 13. 出息心 (呼吸出)

對於一位凡夫來說,根據《阿毘達摩》的分類,一共有**三十七種心**會在觀照中 生起。

這些心會一一輪流生起,你必須以**後生的智慧心(ñāṇa)觀照前一剎那的心**。

會發生什麼呢?舉例來說:**「想吃的心」**生起時,它的生命週期只有兩個 剎那:

①生起,②滅去。

也就是說,它只是「生起與滅去」而已。

你必須以五道支(magganga)來觀照其「生起」;

又必須以智慧觀照那個「已不再存在的心」。

就在這裡,五道支(正見、正思惟、正念、正定、正精進)出現並運作。

- 正見是正確地知見「這是生起法」;
- 正思惟是將所緣法攤開來作觀察;
- 正念是對所生法保持謹慎與覺察;
- 正定是令心穩住於所緣;
- 正精進是持續不懈地觀察所生法。

生起的那個心會對你說:「我是無常(anicca)。」 而當你正在觀照它時,它會說:「我已滅去。」

你必須以**內心中的智慧(ñāṇa)**來跟隨這個歷程。

這些現象將向你顯示四個真相:無常、苦、無我、與苦諦(dukkha sacca)。 而這正是五道支之智慧所見之境。 你若沒有「心」,就會死亡。

所以心是**一個接一個不斷生起**的。你所要做的,就是以觀照之智持續觀察這些現象。

凡所生起的心,皆是無常(anicca); 而那個正在觀照的心,則是**道智(magga)**。

所以,觀照之智就是:

- 無常智 (anicca-ñāṇa)
- 苦智 (dukkha-ñāṇa)
- 無我智 (anatta-ñāna)
- 苦諦智 (dukkha-sacca-ñāṇa)
- ① 是「被觀照的對象」;② 是「觀照的心」。

若你能修到讓①與②契合,則早上修行,晚上即能證法。

當①已經生起,而②稍有遲疑,那麼這中間已經有其他心介入了,你便錯過了原本的對象。

例如:如果三個心生起,那你其實已錯過了兩個心。

依據佛陀所說:若未能即時銜接,從五道支進展到八道支(八正道)便會變慢。

五道支屬於世間智(lokiya-ñāṇa),八道支屬於出世間智(lokuttara-ñāṇa)。

若在觀照中**有煩惱(kilesa)介入**,那便是最巨大的敵人。

若你不以觀智來觀照,那麼所生的只有煩惱而已。

即使你已開始修行,煩惱仍可能夾雜其間。

煩惱就是「魔 (Māra)」。

(尊者在此背誦了**十種煩惱魔(kilesa-māra)**)

若能讓觀行過程中不來雜煩惱,那麼即使只是半小時的修行,也能體證正法。

「觀照生滅現象的智」是由五道支而得的,這即是**毘婆舍那道(vipassanā** magga)。

這十三種心會依次生起,你必須觀照它們,**不遺漏任何一個。**

一開始時,你應觀照「想吸氣與吐氣的心」(不是觀受或身觸)。 (尊者以「蜘蛛的比喻」來說明修行方式)

若觀行中無煩惱介入,即使半小時的實修也可能導向正法的體證。

你必須堅定修行,觀照這十三種心的無常,**以及一切其他生起之法的無常**。若一時無法觀照其他法,就**回到「主心」——吸氣與呼氣之心上**。

修習毘婆舍那,能使你脫離三輪轉(vaṭṭa)——可參照緣起圖。

若不修行,任何時刻都有可能墮入惡趣,這是極其可怕的事。

如果你對自己有慈悲心,那就必須修行;

若你只是餵養身體、照料色身,卻不照顧心,那就表示你對自己毫無悲憫。

觀心

一九六一年十月十一日

五種外來客心:

- 1. 見識
- 2. 聞識
- 3. 嗅識
- 4. 味識
- 5. 身識

身識有兩種:不悅的經驗和愉悅的經驗。

六種內來客心:

- 6. 貪
- 7. 瞋
- 8. 癡
- 9. 不貪
- 10.不瞋
- 11. 思維心

兩種主心:

- 12.入息心
- 13.出息心

對於凡夫而言,只有三十七種心會生起以供觀照(見《阿毗達摩》)。它們將依次生起。以後起的智慧觀照前一個生起的心。會發生什麼事呢?例如,想吃東西的心生起。它的壽命只有①和②。在①生起,在②死亡(消失)。因此,它以生起和滅去的形式存在。你必須以五道支(即定和慧)跟隨生起的心。你必須以智慧跟隨已滅去的心。這就是五道支出現的地方。

正見是正確的看。正思惟是將對象暴露出來以供觀察。正念是對任何生起的都保持警覺。正定是安住於對象。正精進是對對象做出努力。生起的心會告訴你——我是無常的。當你觀照它時,它會告訴你——我已經死了。你必須以你內心的智慧跟隨它。

這些現象會告訴你無常、苦、無我以及苦諦。觀照的五道支正在看著它。

如果沒有心,你就會死亡。因此,心總是接連不斷地生起。你只需要以觀照的智慧觀察它們。

生起的心是無常的,而觀照的心是道。因此,觀照的智慧分別是無常智、苦智、無我智和苦諦智。①是觀照的對象,②是觀照的心。如果你能夠練習並讓①和②契合在一起,早上練習,晚上就能證得佛法。①已經生起了。如果②觀照得稍晚,這意味著在兩個心之間,其他的心已經生起了。然後你會意識到,觀照錯過了第一個對象。例如,在三個心生起之後,它們之間有三個心(你錯過了其中兩個)。然後根據佛陀的教導,從五道支進展到完整的八道支將會變慢。

五道支是世俗的智慧,而八道支是出世間的智慧。煩惱(kilesa)在觀照之間介入是最大的敵人。如果你不以內觀來觀照,只會生起染污。即使在練習中,染污仍然會介入。染污是魔(Mara)。(尊者背誦了魔的十種煩惱)。如果沒有煩惱介入,完成八道支並成為入流者不需要很長時間。生起和滅去現象的智慧是透過五道支獲得的。這是內觀之道(vipassanā magga)。十三種心將依次生起。你必須觀照,不要錯過任何生起的。

一開始,你觀照想要吸氣和呼氣的心(不是感受)。(尊者用蜘蛛的比喻解釋了修行的方法)。如果煩惱沒有在練習中介入,即使半小時的練習也能幫助你體證佛法。你必須堅定地練習。觀照這十三種心以及任何其他生起的無常。如果沒有什麼生起,就回到主心(即吸氣和呼氣的心)。修習內觀能讓你從三輪(見緣起圖)中解脫出來。不修行,隨時都有可能墮入惡趣。這很可怕。如果你對自己有同情心,你必須修行。如果你只餵養身體和照顧它,你對自己沒有任何憐憫。

Happy with Dukkha

13th October 1961

Without knowing of good or bad, living beings are happy with wherever they are. Getting the khandha is getting the fuel. This is the body burning with the fire of birth, ageing, and death. It's a khandha conditioned by others and a khandha oppressed by others. It wasn't created by anyone but is the outcome of ignorance and volitional action. They themselves are not good for receiving the bad ones, but we take it as receiving a good one.

In the whole of samsāra, believing in others leads to a lot of sufferings (i.e., worldly thoughts and views, etc.). Because of past ignorance, we have this khandha, and again in this life, due to ignorance, we are happy with delusion (ignorance connects with ignorance). If you are aging, you are happy with ageing. If you are in pain, you are happy with pain. When hungry, you enjoy food and drink and then experience the suffering of urination and excretion, etc. People are thinking and looking for happiness (there are many to mention in today's world, some are quite stupid and foolish). Taking enjoyment in relieving pain by shifting the khandha from one side to the other. It is always oppressed, like the enjoyment of a patient. There is no enjoyment in getting the khandha. It always grows out with sores, and you're happy by curing it (by conditioning). You must know it by practice.

There are two ways of knowing: from what others say and from oneself. You must practise to know yourself. I'll present the story. The monk Sīvalī asks the Buddha about the qualities of Dhamma. Separating the five khandhas with satipaṭṭhāna will lead to the four establishments of mindfulness. You should practise with one of them. Whichever one you're practising exists only as arising and vanishing. You have to contemplate to discern anicca, whether it's the mind or the feeling, etc. And then you'll know the body you have is the worst thing, an anicca dukkha khandha. The whole khandha is vanishing together, even though there are five groups. You will not find the five khandhas; instead, you find the arising and vanishing of phenomena. For example, we're talking about the death of a Christian, Muslim, and Buddhist, but death is the same. By discerning anicca, you become weary and it must end.

愛上苦

1961年10月13日

眾生**不知善惡**,便對自己所處之境**感到滿足**。

獲得五蘊,即是獲得燃料;這副色身就如同**燃燒著的火把**,燒於生、老、死之 火。

這是他人所造作的五蘊,是他人所逼迫的五蘊,

它並非某人創造出來的,而是**無明與行蘊(有為造作)**的結果。

眾生本身**並不善於迎接惡報**,卻誤以為自己是得到了好東西。

在整個輪迴($sa\dot{m}s\bar{a}ra$)中,信從他人(即世俗的想法與見解)會導致無量的苦難。

由於**過去的無明**,我們才獲得這副五蘊;

而在今生,又因**現前的無明**,我們仍舊沉醉於顛倒當中——無明與無明相連。

若你正在變老,你卻滿足於變老;

若你正在受苦,你卻滿足於受苦。

當你感到飢餓時,你會歡喜於飲食;

然而緊接而來的,卻是排尿與排泄之苦等種種壓迫。

人們總是不斷**思考與尋找快樂**(在當今世界中,這樣的例子多不勝數,其中不 乏荒謬可笑者)。

所謂的「解除痛苦」只不過是把五蘊從這邊移向那邊而已。

五蘊始終是被壓迫的——這就像病人也會「享受」他的病苦一樣。

其實,**獲得這副五蘊,毫無可樂之處。**

它經常生出種種潰瘍與毒瘡,而你卻以「治癒它」為樂(這只是另一種「條件作用」的表現而已)。

這一切都必須經由實修才能如實知見。

有兩種方式可以認識事實:

- 1. 從他人處聽聞;
- 2. 自己親身體證。

你必須透過修行,從自己內心去認識真相。

我現在講一個故事:

有一次,比丘**西婆離(Sīvalī)**向佛陀請問法的殊勝功德。

佛陀開示:將五蘊分離開來的修行方法,即是四念處(satipatthāna);

你可以選擇其中一種來修習。

無論你選哪一念處,它所觀的對象**只具有「生起與滅去」**的特性而已。你必須持續觀照,去辨識它的無常性(anicca),不論你觀的是心、受等。如此一來,你將會明白:

你所擁有的這副色身,是最糟糕的東西,——它是一個無常、苦、敗壞的五蘊。

雖然它表面上分為五蘊,但整體五蘊其實是一起滅去的。

你將無法找到「五蘊」的實體,而只能見到各種現象的生起與滅去。

舉個例子:我們可能談論基督徒、穆斯林、佛教徒的死亡,

但死亡在本質上都是一樣的——皆是「法的滅去」。

當你能夠如實觀照其無常時,

你將會生起**厭離心**,而這一切也就必須結束。

樂於苦

一九六一年十月十三日

由於不知善惡,眾生安於其所處之境。得到五蘊如同得到燃料。這個身體正被 生、老、死的火焰燃燒。它是一個被他人制約的五蘊,一個被他人壓迫的五蘊。 它並非任何人所創造,而是無明和意志行為的結果。它們本身並不適合承受惡 果,但我們卻認為得到它是一件好事。

在整個輪迴中,相信他人會導致許多痛苦(例如世俗的思想和觀點等等)。由 於過去的無明,我們擁有這個五蘊,而今生又由於無明,我們樂於迷惑(無明 與無明相連)。如果你正在衰老,你樂於衰老。如果你正在疼痛,你樂於疼痛。 飢餓時,你享受飲食,然後體驗排泄等等的痛苦。人們正在思考和尋找快樂 (在當今世界有很多例子可以提及,有些相當愚蠢和糊塗)。

藉由將五蘊從一側移到另一側來減輕疼痛,並從中獲得樂趣。它總是受到壓迫,就像病人的樂趣一樣。得到五蘊沒有真正的樂趣。它總是長滿瘡痍,而你卻樂於治癒它(透過制約)。你必須透過實踐來了解這一點。

有兩種了解的方式:從他人所說和從自身。你必須透過實踐來了解自己。我將講述一個故事。希瓦利比丘(Sīvalī)向佛陀詢問佛法的特質。以四念處分離五蘊將導向四念住。你應該修習其中之一。無論你修習哪一個,都只以生起和滅去的形式存在。你必須觀照以辨識無常,無論是心還是感受等等。然後你將會知道你所擁有的身體是最糟糕的東西,一個無常苦的五蘊。即使有五個蘊,整個五蘊也一起消失。你不會找到五個蘊;相反地,你找到的是現象的生起和滅去。例如,我們談論基督徒、穆斯林和佛教徒的死亡,但死亡是相同的。透過辨識無常,你會感到厭倦,而它必然會結束。

Differences between Khandha and Nibbāna

(no date)

The five khandhas of body and mind do not always exist and are full of suffering. Nibbāna is the opposite; it always exists and is free from suffering. The body and mind are impermanent and undesirable due to their suffering. Nibbāna always exists, is free from suffering, and is everlasting (dhuva nibbāna), sukha Nibbāna, amata Nibbāna. The body and mind carry with them ageing, sickness, and death. If you observe them with ñāṇa, you see they are constantly falling apart. Therefore, the Buddha and arahants are disgusted with them. Whatever khandha you desire will only bring suffering. Nibbāna doesn't have suffering and is unchanging; therefore, it's important to attain it. Devatās and brahma-gods who desire becoming (bhava) are with ignorant eyes, unknowing the truth and speaking blindly about it. They are making prayers in ignorance (like later monks). This is Kilesa craziness. Saṁsāra means the continuous cycle of the khandha.

Samsāra has no beginning but has an ending. Its processes are so long that the beginning cannot be found. The beginning of dukkha is not clear. How long has it been like this? If you know the truth, samsāra will end. Every day you're searching for the khandha with clothing, food, etc. Nibbāna has a beginning and no ending. It surely has a beginning. It's a state of Dhamma happiness with no ending. If you desire (chanda) Nibbāna, the beginning is in knowing the truth. After that, you'll arrive at Nibbāna, which has no ending. Knowing dukkha sacca is the beginning of Nibbāna. If you know the beginning, then just follow it.

You have been in samsāra for too long without knowing the beginning (i.e., Nibbāna).

In the Khandhavagga of Khandhasaṃyutta, Ananda asks the Buddha, "I want to know about Nibbāna. What kind of dhamma is it?" The Buddha shows him the beginning of dukkha sacca. If you describe the five khandhas as truth (sacca), they are dukkha sacca. If you find out the beginning of dukkha sacca, you will find out the ending of dukkha sacca. The impermanence and suffering of the body and mind are their permanent tasks. (i.e., anicca and dukkha sacca). You have seen how important anicca is. With the contemplation of anicca on feelings, one later becomes wearisome of anicca. For the wearisome person, not wanting to see, to hear, and to associate with

anything arises. Not wanting them means knowing them as dukkha sacca. With the realization of not wanting, suffering comes to an end.

The impermanence and suffering of dhamma vanish (i.e., khandha with anicca). A state of no suffering and always existing, which is Nibbāna, arises.

五蘊與涅槃之差異

(日期不詳)

身心的五蘊並非恆常存在,且充滿了苦。

而**涅槃**正好相反——它**恆常存在**,並且完全無苦。

這副身心因其苦的本質而呈現**無常、不可欲(非愛)**之性。

涅槃則是**恆常存在(dhuva nibbāna)、無苦的涅槃(sukha nibbāna)、不死的** 涅槃(amata nibbāna)。

身與心都伴隨著老、病、死。

若你以**智慧(ñāṇa)**觀照,就會看到:它們總是在分解、敗壞。

因此,佛陀與阿羅漢們都對此深感厭離。

你所貪愛、所希求的任何五蘊,只會為你帶來痛苦。

涅槃中沒有苦,且不變易;因此,**獲得涅槃是極其重要之事**。

那些**欲求「有」(bhava)的天神與梵天們**,其眼尚未開、尚未知見真相,對涅槃也只是在盲目發言。

他們是在「無明中祈願」,就如同後世的某些出家人一般。

這即是煩惱的瘋狂(kilesa madness)。

輪迴(samsāra)即是五蘊不斷流轉的過程。

輪迴無有起點,但是有終點的。

這段歷程之久遠,令其起點無法尋得。

苦的開端已不可追溯——究竟有多久以來都是這樣的?

若你能知見真相(sacca),輪迴就會止息。

每天,你都在為了五蘊忙碌地追尋衣食住行。

而涅槃是有起點而無終點的;

它的確有一個開始——那就是法樂的境界,無有終盡。

若你欲求(chanda)涅槃,其起點即在於知見真相(sacca);

隨後,你將到達**無終點的涅槃**。

知苦諦 (dukkha sacca),就是涅槃的起點;

你若已知其起點,接下來便只需依循而行。

你在輪迴中流轉已太久,卻從未知曉那個起點(涅槃)。

在《相應部·蘊相應(Khandhavagga)》中,尊者**阿難**請問佛陀:「我想知道關於涅槃的事。涅槃是什麼樣的法?」

佛陀回答他:「你應從苦諦之起點去觀察。」

若你將五蘊作為真相(sacca)來說,它們即是苦諦(dukkha sacca)。

若你找到了苦諦的起點,便能找出苦諦的終點。

身心的無常與苦,正是它們不變的任務與本性(也即是無常與苦諦)。

由此你應能理解:「無常」是多麼重要!

當你在「受」上觀無常時,接著就會產生對無常的厭離。

對一位生起厭離者而言,會開始不願見、不願聞、不願與任何事物相應。

不願要它們,就代表你已知它們是苦諦。

當這種「不想要」的見解現前時,苦也就滅盡了。

無常與苦的法(即五蘊)便隨之滅去。

這時,一個**沒有苦、恆常存在的狀態——涅槃——**便會顯現出來。

五蘊與涅槃之差異

(無日期)

身心五蘊並非恆常存在,且充滿苦惱。涅槃則恰恰相反;它恆常存在,且遠離苦惱。由於其苦,身心是無常且令人不悅的。涅槃恆常存在,遠離苦惱,且是永恆的(dhuva nibbāna)、樂的涅槃(sukha Nibbāna)、不死的涅槃(amata Nibbāna)。身心攜帶著衰老、疾病和死亡。如果你以智慧(ñāṇa)觀察它們,你會看到它們不斷地崩解。因此,佛陀和阿羅漢對它們感到厭惡。你所希求的任何五蘊都只會帶來苦惱。涅槃沒有苦惱,且不變易;因此,證得涅槃非常重要。

希求存在的諸天(devatās)和梵天神(brahma-gods)都以無知的眼睛看待事物,不了解真理,盲目地談論它。他們在無明中祈求(就像後來的僧侶一樣)。這是煩惱的瘋狂。輪迴(saṁsāra)意指五蘊的持續循環。輪迴沒有開始,但有結束。它的過程如此漫長,以至於無法找到開端。苦的開端並不清晰。這樣的情况持續多久了?如果你了解真理,輪迴將會結束。你每天都用衣食等來尋找五

蘊。涅槃有開始,沒有結束。它確實有開始。它是一種沒有終結的佛法之樂的 狀態。如果你希求(chanda)涅槃,其開端在於了解真理。之後,你將會到達 沒有終結的涅槃。了解苦諦是涅槃的開端。如果你了解開端,那就跟隨它。

你已經在輪迴中太久了,卻不知道開端(即涅槃)。在《蘊相應》

(Khandhasaṃyutta)的《蘊品》(Khandhavagga)中,阿難問佛陀:「我想了解涅槃。它是什麼樣的法?」佛陀向他展示了苦諦的開端。如果你將五蘊描述為真理(sacca),它們就是苦諦。如果你找到苦諦的開端,你將會找到苦諦的終結。身心的無常和苦是它們永恆的任務(即無常和苦諦)。你已經看到無常有多麼重要。透過對感受的無常進行觀照,一個人之後會對無常感到厭倦。對於感到厭倦的人來說,不想要看、聽和與任何事物交往的心會生起。不想要它們意味著了解它們是苦諦。隨著不想要的體悟,苦惱便會終止。

法的無常和苦惱消失了(即具有無常的五蘊)。一種沒有苦惱且恆常存在的狀態,即涅槃,便會生起。

Making Decision with The Khandha

(no date)

If you view kammas following behind you like a shadow, it is sassata-diṭṭhi. You can't say "don't view it this way," or "view it that way," because both of these views are taught by the Buddha. All Buddhists rely on kammas. From the insight point of view, viewing kammas following like a shadow and having the nature of stability becomes sassata diṭṭhi. According to the Buddha, those with wrong views will not attain path knowledge. Viewing kamma as "my kamma" by relying on kammas becomes sakkāya and sassata diṭṭhis. Viewing it with the suttanta-method becomes a wrong view. Viewing with the Abhidhamma method, it doesn't follow like a shadow.

In the time of the Buddha, these problems were already present. When kammasakatā ñāṇa is taken as stable and permanent, it forbids path and fruition knowledges. This was mentioned in the Mahāpuṇṇama Sutta, Majjhima Nikāya (MN 109). An arahant gave instructions to 60 monks, but no one attained Dhamma, and he took them to the Buddha. The khandha arises because of taṇhā. With the cessation of taṇhā, upādāna, and kamma cannot do anything. There are two kinds of taṇhā — with prayers and without prayers (with one's effort and by natural processes). With the khandha, clinging arises and with clinging, you get the khandha. Therefore, they are not the same as the other. If you contemplate one of the five khandhas as anicca, sakkāya diṭṭhi will not arise. How to contemplate the khandha so it is free from taṇhā, māna, and diṭṭhi? If you can contemplate them as — "this is not mine, this I am not, and this is not myself," you will be free from them.

During contemplation, don't let it become mine. This refers to the monk who had a wrong view on kamma with sassata-diṭṭhi in the sutta. In vipassanā practice, don't make kamma the only reliable thing for you. In the making of merits, you can use it this way. Kammasakatā ñāṇa cannot dispel diṭṭhi. (According to Sayadaw, the 60 monks had sakkāya and sassata-diṭṭhis, which is why they did not attain any realization during the rain retreat.)

Cutting off kamma is necessary to arrive at Nibbāna; otherwise, it's impossible. It's clear that listening to Dhamma requires a good teacher. Arriving at

the Brahma Worlds is not by kamma, but through samādhi. In dāna practice, volition or kamma is the leader.

In sīla, abstinence (virati) is the leader. In samatha, samādhi is the leader. In the nibbānic path, wisdom (ñāṇa) is the leader. Taking everything as a result of kamma, if not known accordingly in its own place, is incorrect. Not everything is in the province of kamma. In the noble eight-fold path, kamma is included but not as the leader.

(Sayadaw continues to talk about the Dog Ascetic Discourse) The Buddha never spoke if there was no benefit. He knew that Seniya – the dog ascetic – would become an arahant. Ending at other people's mouths (sayings or teachings) is a terrible thing; (by terrorists you die once, but with wrong views, you die forever and fall into apāyas)

If you do not see and know about the khandha with your own knowledge, then you may end up with other faiths. You have to arrive at the khandha. The khandha will never tell you anything wrong. Do the work of knowledge to penetrate the khandha!

以五蘊作抉擇

(日期不詳)

若你把「業(kamma)」視為如影隨形,便是**常見(sassata-diṭṭhi)**。

你不能說:「不要這樣看」或「應該那樣看」,因為**兩種看法都是佛陀所曾開 示的**。

所有佛教徒皆依賴業;但從**觀智的角度來說**,若將業視為如影隨形且具有穩定性,便已落入**常見**。

依據佛陀的教導,有邪見者無法證得道智(magga-ñāṇa)。

把「這是我的業」這樣的見解當作依止,即是**有身見與常見(sakkāya 和** sassata-diţṭhi)。

依據經藏的方式來解釋業,若落入執取,也會變成邪見;

但若以**阿毘達摩的方式**來觀察,就不會有如影隨形之執著。

在佛陀時代,這類問題就已經存在。

當人們將**業報智(kammasakatā-ñāṇa)**視為穩固與恆常,就會阻礙道果智的現起。

這一點在《大滿月經》(Mahāpuṇṇama Sutta, MN 109)中有所提及:

有一位阿羅漢指導了六十位比丘,但無人證悟,於是他帶著他們去見佛陀。

五蘊是因渴愛(taṇhā)而生;若渴愛滅了,執取(upādāna)與業也無法再發揮作用。

渴愛有兩類:

- 1. 透過祈願而來的,
- 2. 無祈願、自然過程而來的。

一旦有五蘊,就會產生執取;有執取,便會再得五蘊。

因此,這與其他條件並不相同。

若你觀察五蘊之一為無常(anicca),則**身見(sakkāya-diṭṭhi)**就不會生起。 那麼,該如何觀察五蘊,才能斷除貪、慢與邪見呢?

若你能觀之為:

「這不是我的、這不是我、這不是我所是」——你便能從這三者中解脫。

在觀行中,不要讓五蘊變成「我的」。

這就如同經中那位比丘,他對業的見解落入了常見。

在毘婆舍那實修中,不要把「業」當作唯一可以依靠的東西。

在修福報時,你可以如此使用業觀,但在觀智上,不能依靠它。

業報智(kammasakatā ñāṇa)並不能破除邪見。

(依尊者所說,這六十位比丘正是因為有身見與常見,所以整個兩安居中都無 法證得法。)

想要證入涅槃,就必須斷除業的力量;否則是不可能的。

由此可知:聽聞正法,必須要有善知識引導。

進入梵天界,不是依靠業,而是透過禪定(samādhi);

在佈施(dāna)中,意願(cetana)或業是主導;

在持戒(sīla)中,離惡(virati)是主導;

在止禪中,定是主導;

而在通往涅槃的道路上,智慧(ñāṇa)才是主導者。

若將一切都歸為業的結果,卻不知按其處所理解,這就是錯誤的見解。

並非一切都屬於業的範疇;在八正道中,業是包含其中,但**並非主導因。**

(尊者接著提到《狗行者經》的內容)

佛陀從不說無益之語;他知道**狗行苦行者(Seniya)**未來會證得阿羅漢果,才說那番法語。

若你只是終結於他人的話語或信仰,那將是極其危險的事。

被恐怖份子殺,只死一次;但若落入邪見,便是死無止境,墮入惡趣。

若你不以自身的智慧觀見與認識五蘊,那你最終可能會落入其他外道信仰之中。 **你必須回到五蘊之上,從五蘊出發。**

五蘊絕不會欺騙你。

請你以智慧之力去穿透它吧!

以五蘊做決定

(無日期)

如果你將緊隨你之後的業視為像影子一樣,那就是常見(sassata-diṭṭhi)。你不能說「不要這樣看」,或「那樣看」,因為這兩種觀點都是佛陀所教導的。所有佛教徒都依賴業。從內觀的角度來看,將緊隨其後的業視為像影子一樣,並具有穩定的本質,就成了常見。根據佛陀的說法,那些有邪見的人將無法證得道智。依賴業而將業視為「我的業」,就成了有身見(sakkāya-diṭṭhi)和常見。以經藏(suttanta)的方法來看待它,就成了邪見。以阿毗達摩的方法來看待,它並不像影子一樣跟隨。

在佛陀的時代,這些問題就已經存在了。當業果智(kammasakatā ñāṇa)被視為穩定和永恆時,它會阻礙道智和果智。這在《大滿月經》(Mahāpuṇṇama Sutta,中部尼柯耶 MN 109)中提到過。一位阿羅漢指導了六十位比丘,但沒有人證得佛法,於是他帶他們去見佛陀。五蘊的生起是因為渴愛(taṇhā)。隨著渴愛的止息,執取(upādāna)和業就無能為力了。

有兩種渴愛——有祈求的和沒有祈求的(透過個人的努力和自然的過程)。有了五蘊,執取就生起;有了執取,你就得到五蘊。因此,它們與其他不同。如果你觀照五蘊中的任何一個為無常,有身見就不會生起。

如何觀照五蘊才能使其遠離渴愛、慢(māna)和邪見?如果你能將它們觀照為 ——「這不是我的,我不是這個,這不是我的自我」,你就能從它們之中解脫 出來。

在觀照期間,不要讓它變成「我的」。這指的是經中那位對業持有常見的邪見的比丘。在內觀修行中,不要將業視為你唯一可靠的東西。在行善積德時,你

可以這樣運用它。業果智無法驅散邪見。(根據尊者的說法,那六十位比丘持有有身見和常見,這就是為什麼他們在兩季安居期間沒有獲得任何證悟)。

切斷業是到達涅槃所必需的;否則,這是不可能的。很明顯,聽聞佛法需要一位好老師。到達梵天界不是透過業,而是透過禪定。在布施(dāna)的修行中,意志或業是領導者。在持戒(sīla)中,不作(virati)是領導者。在止

(samatha)的修行中,禪定是領導者。在涅槃之道中,智慧是領導者。如果沒有如實地了解每一件事在其自身的位置,而將一切都視為業的結果,那是錯誤的。並非一切都在業的範圍之內。在八正道中,業包含在其中,但不是作為領導者。

(尊者繼續談論《犬戒經》)如果沒有利益,佛陀從不說話。他知道仙尼耶——那位犬戒苦行者——將會成為阿羅漢。終結於他人的口中(言論或教導)是一件可怕的事情;(被恐怖分子殺死你只死一次,但有了邪見,你將永遠死亡並墮入惡趣)。

如果你不用自己的智慧去看和了解五蘊,那麼你可能會落入其他的信仰。你必須到達五蘊。五蘊永遠不會告訴你任何錯誤的事情。做智慧的工作,以穿透五蘊!

Not for Chanting but for Practice

(no date)

[Sayadaw gave two talks on the qualities of Dhamma with humour]

The work of seeing Dhamma by oneself is the practice leading to path knowledge. If you contemplate to see the object of contemplation, the contemplative knowledge will send you to Nibbāna directly. Sandiṭṭhiko – it's visible here and now through insight. Whatever dhamma arises, you have to ask yourself – is it still there or not? You have to contemplate your own death. If you see it, it becomes sandiṭṭhika. Seeing moment-to-moment dying and not finding the corpses is insight. Finding the corpse in a moment of death is samatha. You will not see your death even once if you are only looking for deaths. If you see it, you will not need to look for it (it's meaningful). If you are mindful, you will think about it (i.e., the way of insight). With mindful attention, think about the minds which arise for the worldling. This is called sati sampajañña – mindfulness with full awareness. With practice, let maggaṅga – the path factors – arise. The path factors will send you to Nibbāna.

You all do not want the true happiness of Nibbāna, but instead desire the fake happiness found in wives and children. Therefore, the Buddha called you all – CRAZY PEOPLE! Or Lunatics! Puthujjana-ummattako – worldlings are crazy fools. Which one do you prioritize – Dhamma or rice? Rice becomes excrement and Dhamma sends you to Nibbāna. In the whole of samsāra, you all prefer the useless things and resist the right and useful things (it is easy to do demerits and difficult to do merits).

If people don't know the truth, they will continue to do things that cause suffering. Not knowing the truth is more fearful than anything else. In the Sacca saṃyutta, the Buddha took some monks to a very steep mountain top. One of the monks said to the Buddha that falling down from there was quite frightening. The Buddha responded that not knowing the truth is more dangerous. Discerning anicca means knowing the truth. Only with the contemplation of insight will you discern it. Only this way will you know the arising of dukkha and the vanishing of dukkha. With a lot of contemplation, you will come to discern the truth. (Sayadaw continues to explain how taṇhā keeps the result power of kamma intact). As long as taṇhā never dies, kamma will never die. If the path factors come in, they cut off taṇhā and kamma.

I am urging you to practice because I worry about the seriousness of bad results. Your own desire will never do it, because you don't know its ugliness.

Taṇhā is the cause of Dukkha and not kammas. (Sayadaw continues to talk on insight practice with the six attributes of Dhamma). The duty of the Buddha is to talk about goodness. Your duty is to do goodness. The Buddha has done his duty, but you're still irresponsible (this refers to svākkhāto — talking about goodness and sandiṭṭhiko — to do goodness). If you respect the Buddha, you will go to sugati; and if you do what he asks of you, you will arrive at Nibbāna. You recite the attributes of Dhamma by heart, but you never think about it as your own business (i.e., sandiṭṭhika — develop it in the heart).

Sīvalī the monk asked the Buddha about the sandiṭṭhika dhamma for himself. Every time it becomes sandiṭṭhika (i.e., knowing the arising dhamma), the five path factors arise. When it becomes mature, it fulfills the eight path factors and you become a person with path knowledge.

If it does not become sandiṭṭhika and does not become akālika (i.e., apparent here and now — not cutting off taṇhā, upādāna, and kamma) then Ehi-passiko — dhamma is calling to you, "come and contemplate me." Ehi is the object of contemplation, passa is contemplative knowledge. When dhamma is calling to you, and you go there with diṭṭhi and taṇhā, you fall into the trap. For example, a mosquito bites you, and you go there with your hand (bang!) It's a direct path for you to go to apāyas. The path to the wok (cauldron) is straight, but the task of going toward Nibbāna is crooked with twists and turns. If you don't follow with ñāṇa the itching of mosquito bites, then lobha, dosa, and moha will follow you.

非為誦唸,而為修行

(日期不詳)

【尊者以幽默語氣講述兩篇關於法之特質的開示】

親自見法的功夫,就是通向道智的修行。

若你修觀時,能如實見到所觀之法,那麼這觀智(vipassanā ñāṇa)將直接引領你通往涅槃。

sandiṭṭhiko(現見法)——即是透過觀智,在當下清楚見到。

不論生起什麼法,你都要問自己:「它還在嗎?還存在嗎?」

你應該觀想自己的死亡。

若你能見到,那就是 sandiţţhika。

逐一剎那見死、卻不見屍體, 這就是觀智;

若見到「死屍」那般的靜止狀態,則是止禪。

若你只是在尋找死亡,你連一次「真實的死亡」都看不見。

但若你真的看見了,便不再需要「尋找」——這就有了意義。

若你具備正念,你便會去思惟這些(即觀智的方式);

有正念的觀察,去思考凡夫心的生起,這就稱為 sati-sampajañña (正念與清醒知)。

當你持續修行時,**道支(magganga)**將會現起。

道支會把你引向涅槃。

你們都不想要涅槃這種「真實的快樂」,

反倒貪著於妻子與孩子這些「假的快樂」。

因此佛陀說你們是——瘋子!

「Puthujjana-ummattako」:凡夫皆是顛倒愚癡者。

你究竟把什麼放在首位——法?還是白米飯?

白米飯最後變成排泄物,

而法卻能引領你證入涅槃。

在整個輪迴中,你們總是偏好無益之物,卻抗拒正道與有益之事。

(因為作惡易,行善難。)

若眾生不了知真相,他們就會繼續造作招感苦果的業。

不了知真相,比任何東西都更加可怕。

在《真理相應部》(Sacca Saṃyutta)中,佛陀曾帶比丘們登上一座險峻山頂。

其中一位比丘說:「若從這裡跌落,實在令人恐懼。」

佛陀回應說:「不了知真理,比這還可怕。」

能夠辨識無常(anicca),就是知見真理。

只有透過**昆婆舍那觀行**,你才會辨知它;

也只有如此,你才會知見苦的生起與苦的止息。

若你經常修觀,就會逐漸辨明真理。

(尊者此處繼續說明「渴愛如何保留業的效力」)

只要渴愛不滅,業就不會滅。

但當道支生起時,便能斷除渴愛與業。

我苦口婆心地催促你修行,是因為我擔心「惡果」的可怕。

你自己的欲望永遠不會帶你去做這件事,因為你不了知它的可厭與險惡。

渴愛,才是苦的根源,而非業。

(尊者接著以「法的六種特質」來說明觀行之道)

佛陀的職責,是說出善法;

而你的職責,是去實行善法。

佛陀已完成他的責任;但你,依然不負責任。

(這正是「svākkhāto」——已善說之法,與「sandiṭṭhiko」——應實修之法的對比)

若你尊敬佛陀,你將投生善趣;

而若你遵行佛陀的教導,你將證入涅槃。

你雖能倒背如流地誦念法的六特質,卻**從未將之當作自己的事來實踐**。 (即未將「sandiṭṭhika」落實於心中)

比丘**西婆離(Sīvalī)**曾問佛陀:「什麼是對我來說真正的現見法(sandiṭṭhika dhamma)?」

每當你知見所生之法,這當下就是現見法(sandiṭṭhika),也是五道支現起之時。

當它進一步成熟,便圓滿為八道支,你即成為一位具足道智之人。

若它未成為 sandiṭṭhika,也未成為 akālika(即當下明顯,而非斷除 taṇhā、upādāna 與 kamma),

那麼,ehi-passiko——法會對你呼喚說:「來!來觀我。」

ehi 是所觀之法;passa 是觀照的智慧。

當法對你呼喚,而你帶著**邪見與渴愛而去**,你就**掉入陷阱。**

舉例來說:一隻蚊子叮你,你立刻伸手去拍--啪!

這條路徑,直接將你送進惡趣之中。

前往地獄油鍋的路是筆直的,

但前往涅槃的道路,卻彎彎曲曲、充滿迂迴。

若你在蚊子叮咬之時,未以觀智(ñāṇa)來觀察癢腻,

那麼: **貪(lobha)、瞋(dosa)、癡(moha) **便會如影隨形地跟著你。

非為誦念・乃為實修

(無日期)

[尊者以幽默的方式講述了兩次關於佛法特質的開示]

親自見法的工夫是導向道智的修行。如果你觀照以看見觀照的對象,觀照的智慧將直接送你到涅槃。「Sandiṭṭhiko」——透過內觀,在此時此地可見。無論什麼法生起,你都必須問自己——它還在那裡嗎?還是不在了?你必須觀照你自己的死亡。如果你看見它,它就成為「sandiṭṭhika」。看見剎那剎那的死亡而找不到屍體是內觀。在死亡的一刻找到屍體是止。如果你只尋找死亡,你甚至一次也不會看見你的死亡。如果你看見它,你就不需要再尋找它了(它是有意義的)。如果你保持正念,你就會思考它(即內觀的方式)。以正念的注意力,思考凡夫生起的心。這稱為「sati sampajañã」——具足正念和正知。透過修行,讓「maggaṅga」——道支——生起。道支將送你到涅槃。

你們都不想要涅槃的真樂,反而渴望在妻子兒女身上找到虛假的快樂。因此,佛陀稱你們所有人——瘋子!或精神錯亂者!「Puthujjana-ummattako」——凡夫都是瘋狂的傻瓜。你們優先考慮哪一個——佛法還是米飯?米飯變成糞便,而佛法送你到涅槃。在整個輪迴中,你們都偏愛無用的東西,而抗拒正確和有用的東西(造惡容易,行善困難)。

如果人們不知道真理,他們將繼續做導致痛苦的事情。不知道真理比任何事情都更可怕。在《諦相應》(Sacca saṃyutta)中,佛陀帶領一些比丘到一個非常陡峭的山頂。其中一位比丘對佛陀說,從那裡掉下去非常可怕。佛陀回答說,不知道真理更危險。辨識無常意味著知道真理。只有透過內觀的觀照,你才能辨識它。只有這樣,你才會知道苦的生起和苦的滅去。透過大量的觀照,你將

會辨識真理。(尊者繼續解釋渴愛如何保持業的果報力完整)。只要渴愛不死,業就永遠不死。如果道支生起,它們就會切斷渴愛和業。我敦促你們修行,因為我擔心惡果的嚴重性。你們自己的慾望永遠不會做到這一點,因為你們不知道它的醜陋。渴愛是苦的原因,而不是業。(尊者繼續談論具有佛法六種特質的內觀修行)。佛陀的職責是談論善。你的職責是行善。佛陀已經盡了他的職責,但你仍然不負責任(這指的是「svākkhāto」——談論善,以及「sandiṭṭhiko」——行善)。

如果你尊敬佛陀,你將會去善趣;如果你做他要求你做的事,你將會到達涅槃。你用心背誦佛法的特質,但你從不把它看作是你自己的事(即「sandiṭṭhika」——在心中發展它)。希瓦利比丘向佛陀詢問他自己的「sandiṭṭhika dhamma」。每次它變成「sandiṭṭhika」(即知道生起的法),五道支就會生起。當它成熟時,它會圓滿八道支,你就會成為一個擁有道智的人。如果它沒有變成「sandiṭṭhika」,也沒有變成「akālika」(即在此時此地顯現——沒有切斷渴愛、執取和業),那麼「ehi-passiko」——佛法正在呼喚你,「來觀照我。」「Ehi」是觀照的對象,「passa」是觀照的智慧。當佛法呼喚你,而你帶著邪見和渴愛去那裡時,你就會落入陷阱。例如,蚊子咬你,你用手去拍(啪!)。這是一條直接讓你去惡趣的路。通往鑊湯地獄的路是直的,但走向涅槃的道路是彎曲的,充滿曲折。如果你不用智慧隨觀蚊子叮咬的搔癢,那麼貪、瞋、癡將會跟隨你

Worthless and Worthy

(no date)

(In the beginning, Sayadaw, using the D.A process, describes many kinds of unwholesome and wholesome minds arising. With the unwholesome mind, a person lives a bad life, and with a wholesome mind, one lives a good life). The preceding mind is paticcasamuppāda — the cause and the following mind is paticcasamuppanna — the result. Mostly living with bad minds means that after death, one must go to apāyas. If the person dies, don't make merits for them. If one can use or insert knowledge (ñāṇa) in selling and buying businesses, one is living a good life (i.e., with mindfulness in daily life). Killing whatever of cause arises with the maggaṅga means being alive with the path factors. You can be alive with only one mind, which is a good life. You must correct it. Follow behind with the maggaṅga of discerning anicca. Most of the worldlings are living a bad life.

(This important point is good for contemplation. Most beings come to this world as humans living worthless lives; even most Buddhists can't escape from it. Therefore, the apāya existences are open to most human beings who create foolish, useless, and harmful actions for themselves, others, and nature. The most harmful people are some influential and wealthy people whose impacts can be seen at the international or global levels – instability, insecurity, natural disasters, etc. arise.) If you are able to observe your minds and be alive with the vipassanā ñāṇa, you will be protected. (Note: There are two important suttas in Aṅguttara Nikāya for guarding the mind and self-examination. The Book of Fours, Sutta No. 117 and The Book of Tens, Sutta No. 51) You do not need to be afraid of lobha and dosa arising, but you have to be afraid of not knowing when they are arising.

In the satipaṭṭhāna sutta, the Buddha said – you have to know them (when arising). In the worldling's mind, it'll arise. They arise for connecting the D.A processes. If lobha and dosa minds do not arise, it is better. If you contemplate their arising, the enemies become friends. To pay attention to dhammas means the dhammas are the preceding mind arising and paying attention is contemplation. Contemplating the preceding mind with the following mind is paying attention to the dhammas. The preceding mind is anicca and the following mind is magga.

This khandha is a sankhāra dhamma, conditioned by kamma, citta, utu, and āhāra. Therefore, it's not good to be subordinate to others. It is never free from dissolution. You have to go toward the place of the unconditioned until arriving there. Go there with the magganga train. It'll send you to the end place of sankhāra dhammas. The end of conditioned dhammas is Nibbāna. The path factors do not arise by themselves. Only with the knowledge of sankhāra will they arise. Knowledge of the perishing nature of sankhāra dhammas will cause weariness to arise.

After that, you will not want it and it'll end. This ending is arriving at the unconditioned Nibbāna. You have to follow the path to the end of aniccas. The ending of anicca is Nibbāna. Could you distinguish when you're worthy and when you're worthless? If you follow the maggaṅga, you are worthy. Without following it, you become worthless.

有價值與無價值

(日期不詳)

(一開始,尊者以緣起法(D.A process)說明了各種**不善心與善心**的生起。以不善心活著的人,其生活是墮落的;以善心活著的人,才是有義意的生活。)

前念為緣起因(paṭiccasamuppāda),後念為緣生果(paṭiccasamuppanna)。

若一個人**大多數時間都活在惡心中**,那麼死後勢必會墮入**惡趣(apāyas)**。 如果這種人死了,不需要為他造福業(因果關係已定)。

但若有人能在買賣交易等日常活動中**插入觀智(ñāṇa)**,那麼他就是過著**正念生活**(亦即有智慧的在家生活)。

當你以**道支(magganga)**斷除任何惡因之生起,這就是「活在道支之中」。

活在當下的唯一一心,若具備道支,就是「善命」。

你必須修正它。

以觀察無常的道支智慧來跟隨每一念。

大多數凡夫眾生,其實都在過著「惡命」的生活。

(這是一個值得深思的重要觀點:**多數眾生來到人間,其實都在過著無意義的人生**;甚至多數佛教徒也無法擺脫這點。因此,惡趣的大門對大多數人類是敞開的——因為他們製造了許多愚癡、無用與有害於自己、他人與自然的行為。)

其中最具破壞性的人,正是那些有權有勢之人;其影響可遍及全球,引發不穩、 恐懼、自然災難等連鎖反應。

但若你能觀察自己的心,並以**毘婆舍那觀智(vipassanā ñāṇa)**活著, 那你便得到了保護。

(註:在《增支部》中,有兩部關於「防護內心與自省」的重要經典可作為依止:四集第117經與十集第51經)

你不需要怕貪與瞋的生起,你應該害怕的是:它們生起時你卻不知。

佛陀在《念處經》中說過:當它們生起時,你要知見它們。

在凡夫心中,這些煩惱會生起,以連接緣起支分。

若它們不生起固然最好,

但若你能觀察它們的生起,敵人也能變為朋友。

「**注意法(paying attention to dhammas)**」的意思是:前一心為法之生起,而「注意」即是後一心的觀照。

以後念觀照前念,即是「注意法」的實踐。

前念是無常,後念是道智。

這副五蘊是**有為法(saṅkhāra dhamma)**,依業、心、氣候與食物所形成。 因此,**它不值得依附他人,也不值得依賴自身**。

它從未脫離崩壞、解體的命運。

你必須朝向「無為法(未被條件制約的境界)」而行,直到真正抵達彼岸。 搭上**道支列車(magganga train)**去吧!

它會載你通往有為法終結之處。

一切有為法的終點即是涅槃(Nibbāna)。

道支不會自行生起,**唯有當你具足對有為法的智慧時,才會生起。**

知見「有為法的敗壞性」,便會令你生起「厭離心」。

然後,你將不再渴望它,它也便會止息。

這止息,就是到達了**無為的涅槃**。

你必須走在「無常之路」上,直到終點。

無常的終結,就是涅槃。

你能否分辨,**什麼時候你是有價值的?什麼時候你是無價值的?** 若你依循道支,你就是有價值的人;若你不依道支而行,你就是無價值的。

無價值與有價值

(無日期)

(一開始,尊者使用緣起過程,描述了許多不善心和善心的生起。以不善心, 一個人過著糟糕的生活;以善心,一個人過著美好的生活)。

前一個心是緣起(paţiccasamuppāda)——因,後一個心是緣已生

(paṭiccasamuppanna)——果。大多數時候活在惡念中意味著死後必須去惡趣。如果那個人死了,不要為他們做功德。如果一個人能夠在買賣生意中使用或融入智慧(ñāṇa),他就是過著美好的生活(即在日常生活中保持正念)。以道支(maggaṅga)斬斷任何生起的因,意味著以道支活著。你只能以一個心活著,這就是美好的生活。你必須糾正它。以辨識無常的道支緊隨其後。大多數凡夫都過著糟糕的生活。

(這個重要的觀點對於觀照很有益。大多數眾生作為人類來到這個世界,過著毫無價值的生活;即使大多數佛教徒也無法擺脫它。因此,惡趣向大多數為自己、他人和自然製造愚蠢、無用和有害行為的人類敞開。最有害的人是一些有影響力和富有的人,他們的影響可以在國際或全球層面上看到——不穩定、不安全、自然災害等等隨之而來。)如果你能夠觀察你的心念,並以內觀智慧(vipassanā ñāṇa)活著,你將會受到保護。

(註:在《增支部》(Aṅguttara Nikāya)中有兩部重要的經文,關於守護心念和自我檢視。《四集》第117經和《十集》第51經)。你不需要害怕貪婪和瞋恨的生起,但你必須害怕不知道它們何時生起。在《念處經》(satipaṭṭhāna sutta)中,佛陀說——你必須知道它們(生起時)。在凡夫的心中,它們會生起。它們的生起是為了連接緣起過程。如果貪婪和瞋恨的心不生起,那更好。如果你觀照它們的生起,敵人就會變成朋友。注意諸法意味著諸法是前一個生起的心,而注意是觀照。以後一個心觀照前一個心就是注意諸法。前一個心是無常,後一個心是道。

這個五蘊是有為法(saṅkhāra dhamma),由業、心、時節和食所造作。因此, 屈從於他人並不好。它從未擺脫敗壞。你必須朝向無為之處前進,直到到達那 裡。乘坐道支的列車前往那裡。它將送你到有為法的終點。有為法的終點是涅槃。道支不會自行生起。只有了解有為法,它們才會生起。了解有為法的敗壞本質將會導致厭離的生起。之後,你將不會想要它,它將會結束。這個結束就是到達無為的涅槃。你必須遵循道路,直到無常的終點。無常的終點是涅槃。

你能夠區分何時你有價值,何時你沒有價值嗎?如果你遵循道支,你就是有價值的。不遵循它,你就會變得毫無價值。

On the Hindrances

(no date)

[The following five talks are on nivaranas based on a sutta in Aṅguttara Nikāya, Book of Fives, sutta no.193 – Saṅgārava Sutta.]

Niyama – fixed course – is constant wherever it may be. Therefore, wherever it may be, the anicca of the khandha body is always right or true. Only with the Buddha arising do living beings know about the anicca, dukkha, and anatta dhammas. We need someone to talk about these things (they can't be found in other faiths; even believing in kamma is quite a rare thing). Not discerning aniccas makes it unable to uncover the coverings. Today, I'll talk about how to uncover them. Whenever you don't discern aniccas, the desire for the next khandha will arise. You don't know about the khandha very well with its niyama. This is also due to not encountering a good teacher. With no insight knowledge, wandering in samsāra will never end. You'll never have the chance for comfort. There's no goodness in it. There is no-one who taught how to uncover for them; because of these two factors, beings are wandering in samsāra. (tell the story of Sangārava brahmin)

With lobha, you will not discern anicca. You must remove it. The desire for the five cords of sensual pleasures covers up not only the discerning of anicca, but also the knowing of the benefits of oneself and others (This point we can see at the international levels in some countries with people who have power and wealth). At that time, you are not contemplating your meditation object, but have to contemplate the hindrance (lobha). When the mind (ñāṇa) becomes clear again and returns back to the khandha, you will discern anicca. Therefore, don't blame the problem on the pāramīs. For other hindrances, also remove them in the same way by contemplating anicca and returning back to the khandha.

The reasons for wandering in samsāra and carrying around the asubha khandhas are – consorting with evil people and not doing the things that should be done. Therefore, corpses are piling up in samsāra. (Sayadaw gives examples of them: The first one is King Ajātasattu with Devadatta. The second is the elephant trainer's son Pessa, see the Kandaraka Sutta, sutta no.51, Majjhima Nikāya) More than relating to personality, it is consorting with lobha, dosa, and moha unwholesome dhammas. If

anicca dhamma and magga dhamma are fitting in, one is sure to attain Nibbāna. Not seeing dhammas means there are hindrances covering them.

A wanderer asked Sāriputta about dukkha and sukha. Sāriputta's answer was — if becoming again is dukkha, and not becoming again is sukha. The Buddha also said that birth is dukkha sacca — jātipi dukkha sacca. Inserting insight knowledge into the process cuts off the next birth. The Buddha exhorted us that after abandoning this khandha, not getting another khandha is the best thing to do. This is the same as Sāriputta's answer to the wanderer.

I will talk about insight knowledge and path knowledge. (Sayadaw spoke about the five hindrances in gist. In this talk, he mostly talks about restlessness and remorse.)

The hindrances arise at the heart (hadaya vatthu) and disappear at the same place. The mind does not stay at one place, running here and there is restlessness. Remorse has two kinds – remembering and thinking about unwholesomeness that one has done before. Don't think about them; if you do, it forbids Nibbāna. If you do what the Buddha asked you, then it will not be forbidden. You should never think back to the unwholesome dhammas. You have to do what needs to be done. Thinking about merit that one has not done yet is also kukkucca (here is worry). Kukkucca is related to misconduct and good conduct (duccarita and sucarita). These are unpleasant states of mind. If you do not think about them, you will not fall into apāyas; otherwise, you'll fall into apāyas. Die with the contemplation of the impermanent khandha and do not remember them.

Not knowing the truth means that samsāra is very long. Knowing about the truth of dukkha is the most important. If you know dukkha sacca, then samudaya sacca is already abandoned. (This point is very important. Falling in love with dukkha is falling in love with samudaya, and vice versa. When people are terminally ill or near death, this point becomes very clear.) If you do not break up with avijjā, you will never cut off from deaths. Deaths will never disappear if the khandha does not disappear, because the disappearance of the khandha is Nibbāna. (Sometimes, he asks the yogis if the khandhas vanish or not). Someone with the ending of aniccas sees the thing that is able to die come to the end. The ending of death is seeing the deathless. Discerning anicca is the beginning of insight.

Existing is udaya, and vanishing is vaya. As an example, vedanā arises, and when you observe, it is not there anymore. In Burmese is phit (arising) and pyat (vanishing), seeing it through the five path factors. What does the commentary on the Aṅguttara Nikāya say about it? It says, "Let discern anicca, and the seeing of Nibbāna with the eight path factors will arise."

Therefore, don't let doubt come in, as — "Could I attain Nibbāna?" (i.e., if discerning anicca). The duty of yogis is to discern anicca. Just contemplate for the discernment of anicca. If you discern it, you are arriving at insight, and then you'll discern it in greater detail. Insight knowledge conditions the path knowledge with proximity condition — anantarapaccayo. If you do not yet discern anicca, you have not arrived at the inside of sāsana yet. The Buddha's teaching has not gone into your heart. Between the two knowledges of mundane and supramundane, to get the mundane knowledge is more important. The hindrances forbid you to see anicca and Nibbāna. Remorse and worry can come in near the practice of insight and near death.

[Note: see the 5th talk in Part 13 with the title – "Dealing with the five Spiritual Faculties and five Hindrances"]

關於五蓋

(日期不詳)

【以下五場開示依據《增支部·五集》第 193 經《僧伽羅婆經》(Saṅgārava Sutta)·講述五種蓋(nivaraṇa)的修行要點】

Niyama (定向法則)——不論在哪裡,都是固定不變的軌跡。

因此,不論身處何處,五蘊身的無常(anicca)都是正確與真實的。

唯有佛陀出世,眾生才得以知道無常、苦與無我之法。

我們需要一位能講述這些真理的導師,因為它們在其他宗教信仰中無法發現; 甚至連相信業果,也是一件極為罕有之事。 若未能觀見無常,就無法揭開覆蓋的迷障。

今天,我要講的就是:**如何揭開覆蓋。**

只要你未觀見無常,對下一個五蘊的欲望就會生起。

這是因為你不了解五蘊的定向性 (niyama),

亦是因為你未曾遇見善知識的緣故。

若無觀智(vipassanā ñāṇa),你在輪迴中將永無止境地流轉,永遠無法得到安樂。

這一切都沒有任何好處。

沒有人曾教導他們如何揭開迷障。

正因這兩個原因,眾生才一直在三界中輪轉。

(尊者此處舉了僧伽羅婆婆羅門的故事作為例證)

有**貪(lobha)**時,你將無法觀見無常,

所以你必須將它除去。

對五欲之貪著,不僅遮蔽了對無常的覺察,

也障蔽了知見自他之利益。

(這一點在現代社會與一些國家的掌權者、富人身上表現得尤為明顯。)

這時你不能觀禪修對象,反而應該觀察「蓋」本身——即貪欲心。

當觀智(ñāṇa)再次明淨、返回五蘊時,

你便能再次觀見無常。

因此,不要把問題怪罪在「波羅蜜不足」上。

眾生在輪迴中漂泊、揹負著**不淨的五蘊(asubha khandha)**,原因有二:

- 1. 與惡知識為伍,
- 2. 未行應行之事。

因此,在輪迴中屍骨堆積如山。

(尊者舉了兩個例子:

一是**阿闍世王**與**提婆達多**的交往;

二是**馴象師之子貝薩 (Pessa) **的例子,參見《中部》第 51 經《甘達羅迦經》)

這不僅是與特定人格的關係,

更是與貪、瞋、癡等不善法交往的結果。

若能讓「無常法」與「道法」相契合,

則必能證得涅槃。

若你無法看見法,代表有蓋障蔽著它。

有一位遊方修行者曾問舍利弗:什麼是苦,什麼是樂?

舍利弗回答:有生(有)是苦,不再生(無有)是樂。

佛陀也曾說:生(jāti)就是苦諦(dukkha sacca)。

若你在當下法流中插入觀智,

就能切斷來生的生起。

佛陀曾殷切叮嚀我們:**捨此身之後,不再得另身,才是最究竟之事。**

我現在要談談觀智與道智。

(尊者略述五蓋之內容,並在本講中特別著重於「掉舉(uddhacca)」與「後悔(kukkucca)」這兩種蓋)

蓋是從「心所依處(hadaya vatthu)」生起,也在同一處消失。

心無法停留於一處,到處飄動就是掉舉。

而**後悔(kukkucca)**則有兩種:

- 1. 記起過去所造的不善並懊悔,
- 2. 思惟尚未做的善事而焦躁。

這些思惟都會障礙你證得涅槃。

若你依佛陀所教去做,便不會受其障礙。

永遠不要再去回想過去的惡業。

你應該做你該做的事。

思惟那些尚未做的功德,也屬於 kukkucca (焦慮悔恨)。

此蓋與**惡行與善行(duccarita/sucarita)**皆相關,

其本質是不悅與煩亂的心境。

若你不去想它們,就不會墮入惡趣;

但若你去想了,就可能墮入惡趣。

你應當以觀無常的方式而死,切勿回想過去種種。

不了知真理,代表輪迴極其漫長。

知見苦諦,才是最重要的事。

若你知見苦諦,就已斷除了集諦。

(這一點非常關鍵——**戀著於苦**即是戀著於集諦,反之亦然。)

當人們患絕症或臨命終時,這點會變得異常清晰。

若你不與無明分離,你將永遠無法終止死亡。

只要五蘊未滅,死亡就永不止息。

因為五蘊的止息即是涅槃。

(有時尊者會問禪修者:「五蘊是否會止息?」)

一個能觀見無常終結的人,便能見到「可死之物」的終結。

死亡的止息即是見到「不死之法」。

觀察無常,就是觀智的開始。

生起為 udaya,消逝為 vaya。

例如:受(vedanā)生起,你觀察時,它已不復存在。

在緬語中稱為 phit (生起)與 pyat (消逝),

是以五道支觀察所得。

那麼,《增支部》之註釋中對此有何說明?

它說:「讓我們觀見無常,那麼以八道支見涅槃之智慧便會現起。」

因此,**別讓懷疑生起**——譬如:「我真的能證得涅槃嗎?」(即使你正在觀察無常)

修行者的職責就是:觀察無常。

只需為了觀見無常而觀。

若你觀見了,你就已步入觀智階段,

接著你會見得更細緻。

觀智以「相續緣(anantarapaccayo)」作為道智的前導因。

若你尚未見到無常,那你還未真正進入佛法之核心。

佛陀的教導尚未入你的心。

在世間智與出世間智兩者之中,

能得世間觀智(vipassanā ñāṇa)才是更重要的。

蓋(nivaraṇa)會阻礙你看見無常與涅槃。

「悔」與「憂」會在觀行中、也會在臨終時湧現。

【註:可參考第十三輯第五篇講記:《處理五根與五蓋(Dealing with the Five Spiritual Faculties and Five Hindrances)》以作補充。】

關於障礙

(無日期)

[以下五篇開示是關於五蓋(nivaranas)‧基於《增支部》(Aṅguttara Nikāya)第五集第 193 經——《桑伽羅瓦經》(Saṅgārava Sutta)]

法則(Niyama)——固定的軌道——無論在哪裡都是恆常的。因此,無論在哪裡,五蘊身的無常總是正確或真實的。只有在佛陀出世後,眾生才知道無常、苦、無我之法。我們需要有人談論這些事情(在其他信仰中找不到;甚至相信業也是相當罕見的事情)。不辨識無常,就無法揭開覆蓋。今天,我將談談如何揭開它們。每當你不辨識無常時,對下一個五蘊的渴望就會生起。你並不十分了解五蘊及其法則。這也是由於沒有遇到一位好老師。沒有內觀智慧,在輪迴中漂泊將永無止境。你永遠不會有安樂的機會。其中沒有良善。沒有人教導他們如何揭開覆蓋;由於這兩個因素,眾生在輪迴中漂泊。(講述桑伽羅瓦婆羅門的故事)

有了貪欲(lobha),你將無法辨識無常。你必須去除它。對五種感官樂趣的渴望不僅覆蓋了對無常的辨識,也覆蓋了對自身和他人利益的了解(這一點我們可以在一些擁有權力和財富的國家的國際層面上看到)。那時,你沒有觀照你的禪修對象,而是必須觀照障礙(貪欲)。當心(智慧)再次變得清晰並回到五蘊時,你將辨識無常。因此,不要將問題歸咎於波羅蜜。對於其他障礙,也以同樣的方式去除它們,透過觀照無常並回到五蘊。

在輪迴中漂泊並攜帶不淨五蘊的原因是——與惡人交往,以及不做應該做的事情。因此,輪迴中屍體堆積如山。(尊者舉例說明:第一個是阿闍世王與提婆達多。第二個是象伕之子皮薩,見《中部尼柯耶》第51經《甘達羅卡經》)。與其說是與人格有關,不如說是與貪、瞋、癡等不善法交往。如果無常法和道法相契合,一個人肯定會證得涅槃。不見諸法意味著有障礙覆蓋著它們。

一位遊行者問舍利弗關於苦和樂。舍利弗的回答是一一再次成為存在是苦,不再成為存在是樂。佛陀也說過,生是苦諦一一生亦是苦諦(jātipi dukkha sacca)。將內觀智慧融入這個過程會切斷下一次的出生。佛陀勸勉我們,捨棄這個五蘊之後,不再得到另一個五蘊是最好的事情。這與舍利弗對遊行者的回答相同。我將談談內觀智慧和道智。(尊者簡要地談到了五蓋。在這次開示中,他主要談到了掉舉和後悔。)

障礙在心處(hadaya vatthu)生起,也在同一個地方消失。心不住於一處,到處亂跑是掉舉。後悔有兩種——回憶和思考以前做過的不善事。不要想它們;如果你想,它會阻礙涅槃。如果你做佛陀要求你做的事,它就不會被阻礙。你

永遠不應該回想不善法。你必須做需要做的事。思考尚未完成的功德也是惡作(kukkucca,這裡指憂慮)。惡作與惡行和善行(duccarita 和 sucarita)有關。這些是不愉快的心態。如果你不想它們,你就不會墮入惡趣;否則,你將會墮入惡趣。以觀照無常五蘊的心態死去,不要回憶它們。

不知道真理意味著輪迴非常漫長。知道苦的真理是最重要的。如果你知道苦諦,那麼集諦就已經被捨棄了。(這一點非常重要。愛上苦就是愛上集,反之亦然。當人們身患絕症或臨終時,這一點變得非常清楚。)如果你不與無明分手,你將永遠無法擺脫死亡。如果五蘊不消失,死亡將永遠不會消失,因為五蘊的消失就是涅槃。(有時,他會問瑜伽行者五蘊是否會消失)。一個見到無常終結的人,會看到能夠死亡的事物走向終結。死亡的終結是看見不死。辨識無常是內觀的開始。

存在是生起(udaya),消失是滅去(vaya)。例如,感受(vedanā)生起,當你觀察時,它已經不在那裡了。在緬甸語中是「phit」(生起)和「pyat」(滅去),透過五道支來看它。《增支部》的註釋是如何說的呢?它說:「讓無常被辨識,以八道支見涅槃將會生起。」因此,不要讓懷疑進入,例如——「我能證得涅槃嗎?」(即如果辨識無常)。

瑜伽行者的職責是辨識無常。只需為了辨識無常而觀照。如果你辨識了它,你就正在到達內觀,然後你將更詳細地辨識它。內觀智慧以近取緣

(anantarapaccayo)的條件制約道智。如果你尚未辨識無常,你還沒有真正進入聖教(sāsana)的內在。佛陀的教導尚未進入你的心中。在世俗智慧和出世間智慧這兩種智慧之間,獲得世俗智慧更為重要。障礙阻止你看到無常和涅槃。後悔和憂慮可能會在內觀修行和臨終時出現。

[註:見第十三部分第五篇開示,標題為——「處理五根與五蓋」]

Making Kammas Becoming Fruitless

4th February 1961

D.A processes are arising every day in your khandha. If they are happening now, you have to cut them now. If not, you're collecting unwholesomeness (akusala). The D.A process and the khandha are the same. For example – Sukha vedanā arises. If you do not contemplate it, it connects to taṇhā, upādāna, kamma, etc.

Each one of them is a khandha (taṇhā is the first khandha). With one arising, the preceding one ceases, and the next khandha arises by substituting (not changing into something else). Taṇhā and upādāna keep the results of kamma from vanishing. When one kamma finishes, it sends out another one. Therefore, everyone has the debts of kamma. Without yet closing down the doors to apāyas, if you're wasting your time by not doing vipassanā, it is foolish.

After establishing samādhi and following with magga behind whatever vedanā arises (here Sayadaw taught about contemplation on feeling).

使業果無效

1961年2月4日

十二因緣(D.A. process)的運作,每天都在你的五蘊(khandha)中不斷 生起。

如果它現在正在發生,那你就要現在就切斷它。

否則,你就是在**累積不善業(akusala)**。

緣起法(D.A. process) **與五蘊(khandha) **是相同的。 例如,**樂受(sukha vedanā) **生起了, 若你**不觀照它**,它就會連結到**愛(taṇhā)、取(upādāna)、****業(kamma)
**等支分。

這些支分每一個都可以說是一個「蘊」。

當一個生起時,前一個就滅去;

然後下一個五蘊繼續取而代之地生起,並非變成別的東西。

愛與取讓過去所造的業果不會消失,

使之保持潛勢,持續存在。

當一個業果結束時,它又會推動另一個業果生起。

因此,每個人都背負著業債。

如果你還沒有關閉通往**惡趣(apāyas)**的大門,

卻還在浪費時間而不修習內觀(vipassanā),

那真是極為愚癡的行為!

你應該先建立正定(samādhi),

然後以**道智(magga)緊隨任何一種受(vedanā)**之後觀照它。

(在這裡,尊者講述的是如何觀受的修行方法。)

使業不再結果

一九六一年二月四日

緣起(D.A.)的過程每天都在你的五蘊中生起。如果它們現在正在發生,你必須現在就切斷它們。否則,你就是在累積不善(akusala)。緣起過程和五蘊是相同的。例如——樂受(Sukhavedanā)生起。如果你不觀照它,它就會與渴愛(taṇhā)、執取(upādāna)、業(kamma)等等相連。

它們每一個都是一個五蘊(渴愛是第一個五蘊)。一個生起,前一個就止息,而下一個五蘊則透過取代(而不是變成其他東西)而生起。渴愛和執取阻止了業的結果消失。一個業結束後,它會引發另一個業。因此,每個人都有業的債務。在尚未關閉通往惡趣之門的情況下,如果你不修習內觀而浪費時間,那是愚蠢的。

在建立禪定(samādhi)之後,無論什麼感受生起,都以道(magga)緊隨其後(這裡尊者教導了關於感受的觀照)。

Waiting for Dangers

25th February 1961

The Buddha said that if one does not practise vipassanā, it is like waiting for dangers (from Aṅguttara).

Number one – this khandha is going toward the danger of ageing. Is it good to wait for the danger of ageing? Or is it good to finish the practice before arriving there? We're tricked by taṇhā. The danger of ageing gives you a bad result. In vipassanā, you have to persevere with good kamma and good ñāṇa; and with poor kamma and poor ñāṇa, it is impossible.

Number two – this khandha is going toward the danger of sickness. To be free from sickness, you must do the practice before. Every time you are in good health, you have to work hard quickly.

Number three – it's not good to wait for the danger of death (at that time, it is more difficult to practice while dying).

Note: This point is not in the original sutta. Instead of death, it mentions the danger of famine.

Number four: Because of differences in doctrines and views, people are dwelling in discord, disharmony, dispute, etc. This will be the danger of the future (already happening).

Number five: There will come a time when there will be a schism in the sangha.

If you don't cultivate the spiritual life, you are waiting for the five future dangers. At Dhamma chanting (Dhamma Pūjā), people are making prayers to be free from dangers. In reality, they're waiting for all these dangers to arise. Their talkings and doings are not in accordance. About humans, the most difficult thing is admonishing oneself. Waiting for these dangers makes it difficult to admonish.

(Sayadaw continues to talk on the contemplation of feeling) Three types of feeling are murderers. As an example – a fish sees a bait and goes near it to gulp the food. It is then pulled up on the boat and killed by the fisherman. Only by contemplating to the ending of vedanā will one be freed from the murderers. With the ending of vedanā, the other khandhas also come to an end.

Some reflections on this talk

There are four suttas related to the future dangers. All of them are related to the monks. Of the four suttas, sutta no.2 is also related to lay Buddhists. Therefore, Sayadaw is using this sutta to exhort and warn the listeners, most of whom are lay people. See - Book of the Fives, sutta no.77 to 80, Aṅguttara Nikāya .

The dangers of ageing, sickness and death are natural ones from which no one can escape. But the dangers of famine and human discords and disputes are related to human views, thinking and actions, which are human -made; so these are in our hands and we can control them.

It's quite interesting to read what the Buddha mentioned about the future dangers of famine and human discords and disputes in the sutta. All these things have already happened in this 21st century, up to the international or global level. Because of greed, hatred, and delusion, the human mind is polluted and creates a lot of problems, dangers and disasters in societies and natural environments.

等待災難

1961年2月25日

佛陀曾說:**若不修習內觀(vipassanā)**,就如同**在等待災難**。(出自《增支部》)

第一項災難——此五蘊身正邁向老病危險。

你認為,是等待老化的危險比較好,還是在尚未老化前就完成修行比較好呢?

我們一直被貪愛(taṇhā)欺騙。

老化的災難,終將帶來惡劣的結果。

修習內觀時,你必須以**善業(kusala kamma)與正智(ñāṇa)努力精進;若是以劣業與愚癡心**修行,則絕不可能成功。

第二項災難——**此五蘊身正邁向疾病的危險**。 若欲擺脫病苦,必須在病來之前先完成修行。 只要你身體還健康,就應**趁早努力用功**。

第三項災難——**等待死亡的危險是不智的**。 (因為臨終時修行會更困難。)

註:原始經文中,第三項危險並非「死亡」,而是飢荒之苦。

第四項災難——由於**見解與信仰的分歧**,人與人之間充滿**爭執、對立與紛亂**。 這將是**未來的災難**,而且**已在當下發生中**。

第五項災難——僧團將出現分裂。

若你不修學佛法,不修持出世間法,便是正在等待這五種未來災難的降臨。

人們在參加法會或誦經時祈求:

「願我遠離一切災難、病苦、死苦……」

但實際上,他們正是在等待所有這些災難的到來!

他們的言語與行為並不一致。

就人而言,最困難的事情莫過於**自我警醒與自我訓誡**。 若你只是「等待災難」,那麼你就難以警覺、難以反省。

(接著尊者進一步談論**觀受 (vedanānupassanā)**)

三種受(樂、苦、不苦不樂)就是殺人兇手。

譬如一條魚,看到魚餌便游過去吞食, 結果被釣起來,最後被漁夫殺害。

唯有觀照並見到「受」的止息,才有可能從這些殺手手中解脫。

當受止息時,其他五蘊也隨之止息。

對本講記的補述省思:

關於未來災難的主題,**共有四部經文**提及。 這些經文的原始對象皆為出家僧眾,

但其中第二部經(即本講內容所依據之經文)亦與在家佛教徒密切相關。

因此,尊者藉由此經,對以在家信眾為主的聽眾發出警策與勸勉。

參見《增支部·五集》第77至80經。

老、病、死這三種危險,是自然界中誰都無法避免的天災;

但飢荒與人類的爭執不和這兩項,

則是來自於人類自身的錯誤見解、思惟與行為,

屬於人為災難,可由我們自己加以控制與改變。

佛陀曾在經中預言未來將有飢荒與人際紛亂之苦,

而如今,我們已在 21 世紀的國際與全球層面親見此事發生。

由於貪、瞋、癡的污染,人類的心已變得混濁,

在社會與自然環境中製造出無數問題、危機與災難。

等待危險

一九六一年二月二十五日

佛陀說,如果不修習內觀,就像等待危險(出自《增支部》)。

第一一這個五蘊正走向衰老的危險。等待衰老的危險是好事嗎?還是在到達 那裡之前完成修行比較好呢?我們被渴愛所欺騙。衰老的危險會給你帶來惡果。 在內觀中,你必須以好的業和好的智慧堅持不懈;而以差的業和差的智慧,這 是不可能的。

第二一一這個五蘊正走向疾病的危險。為了擺脫疾病,你必須在此之前修行。 每次你身體健康時,都必須迅速努力。

第三——等待死亡的危險並不好(在那時,臨終時修行更加困難)。註:這一點不在原經中。它提到的是飢荒的危險,而不是死亡。

第四:由於教義和觀點的差異,人們生活在不和、不協調、爭端等等之中。這 將是未來的危險(已經發生)。

第五:將來會有僧團分裂的時候。

如果你不修習梵行,你就是在等待這五種未來的危險。在佛法誦念(Dhamma Pūjā)時,人們祈求擺脫危險。但實際上,他們正在等待所有這些危險的發生。 他們的言行並不一致。

關於人類,最困難的事情是自我告誡。等待這些危險使得自我告誡變得困難。

(尊者繼續談論感受的觀照)三種感受是殺手。例如——一條魚看到魚餌,游過去吞食。然後它被漁夫拉上船並殺死。只有透過觀照感受的止息,一個人才能從殺手中解脫出來。隨著感受的止息,其他的五蘊也隨之終止。

關於這次開示的一些反思

有四部經與未來的危險有關。它們都與比丘有關。在四部經中,第二部經也與在家佛教徒有關。因此,尊者使用這部經來勸勉和警告聽眾,其中大多數是居士。參見《增支部》《五集》第77至80經。

衰老、疾病和死亡的危險是自然的,無人能逃脫。但飢荒以及人類的不和與爭端的危險與人類的觀點、思想和行為有關,是人為造成的;因此,這些掌握在我們手中,我們可以控制它們。

閱讀佛陀在經中提到的關於未來飢荒以及人類不和與爭端的危險,相當有趣。所有這些事情都已經在這個二十一世紀發生,甚至達到國際或全球層面。由於貪婪、瞋恨和愚癡,人心受到污染,在社會和自然環境中製造了許多問題、危險和災難。

The Importance of Saving Oneself

28th July 1961

Not practicing vipassanā and wasting time with worldly matters is like watering the poison tree. The task of saving oneself is to listen to Dhamma and practice. When you are young, you have no chance to save yourself. As you grow up, it also increases with family matters. Therefore, coming to this human world is like being a human beast (animal). Only by conquering the kilesas will one become a sotāpanna to an arahant.

Kilesas are hiding in the khandha. Do kilesas die if you don't know the dangers (ādīnavas) of them? Without discerning the anicca khandha, not knowing the dukkha, ungovernable anatta nature, and unable to contemplate the asubha nature, kilesas will not die. You'll conquer kilesas if you can contemplate and discern one of the four factors. If you never cut off the khandha process, the khandha will continue. When the khandha stops, taṇhā stops, which is Nibbāna. With the two vaṭṭa saccas (dukkha and samudaya) stop, and two vi-vaṭṭa saccas (nirodha and magga) arise, the problems will finish.

If you don't know about the khandhas and kilesas, you live with blindness and craziness. In past lives, you were also living as blind and crazy people (Seeing the majority of humans, this point is quite clear).

Because of that, we had encountered many dangers and difficulties. Don't be lazy in the practice. If you discern anicca, there is no need for any pāramīs. Anicca and magga will send you to Nibbāna. Leave your family and business behind, because they can't save you. In the stomach is filth (urine and excrement), and on the khandha, body sweat. You're carrying around this asubha body and think of it as graceful. Practice vipassanā without any concern for the khandha. The kammas controlled by taṇhā and upādāna are disgusting. All humans who die with no understanding of D.A are dying with wrong view. They die with the three wrong factors of wrong perception, knowing, and view.

According to the Buddha, those who die with no chance to listen to suññatā-dhamma are dying with wrong view. How terrible is that? Is there any upward way? If you penetrate suññatā, you are closer to suññatā Nibbāna. Never discerning suññatā, you have fallen down to apāyas. To have the holy Dhamma is not easy. Each

day, the unwholesome kammas arising from the six senses are one's own enemies. If you fall down to apāya even once, it's not easy to come up again (to the human realm). Here there are more people near dying, so they're more important. Bhāvetabba means vipassanā magga (insight knowledge has to be developed many times). You have to make friends with vipassanā magga; living beings make friends with good or bad kammas, but the real friend is ñāṇa.

拯救自己的重要性

1961年7月28日

若不修習**內觀(vipassanā**),而將時間浪費在世間事務上, 就如同在給一棵**毒樹澆水**。

拯救自己的任務,就是聆聽佛法並加以實修。

年輕時,幾乎沒有什麼機會能拯救自己; 長大後,隨著家庭事務的增多,這個機會又更加困難。

因此,投生為人就如同變成「人形的畜生」。

唯有**戰勝煩惱(kilesa)**,才能從凡夫成為**須陀洹果至阿羅漢**。

煩惱就藏在五蘊之中。

如果你不知道它們的危險性(ādīnava),煩惱會自己消失嗎?

如果你不能觀察並如實知五蘊的無常(anicca)、不能看見其為**苦、無主(anatta)**之性,也無法如實觀察其為不淨(asubha),

那麼這些煩惱就絕不會消滅。

但如果你能觀照並如實知其中任一項真實特性,你就能征服煩惱。

若你從未切斷五蘊的生起過程,

它就會持續延展,延續下去。

當五蘊止息時,貪愛(taṇhā)也將止息,這就是涅槃(Nibbāna)。

當**兩種輪迴真諦(vaṭṭa sacca:苦與集)**止息,兩種出世真諦(vivaṭṭa sacca:滅與道)便會生起,屆時,一切問題也將終結。

若你不認識五蘊與煩惱,就會如同盲人與瘋子般活著。

在過去生中,你也曾這樣盲目而瘋狂地活著。 (觀察現今大多數人,這一點就相當清楚。)

因此,我們才會在無數生命中遭遇許多危難與苦難。

不要懶惰於修行!

只要你能**觀察無常(anicca)**,就不需要任何波羅蜜(pāramī)。

無常與道智(magga)將引領你通往涅槃。

放下你的家庭與事業,因為它們無法拯救你!

肚子裡是屎尿,身體外是汗水, 你卻扛著這副不淨之身,還妄想它是美好可愛的。

應無所牽掛地修習內觀!

被貪愛與執取(upādāna)所支配的業,都是令人厭惡的。

那些未了解十二因緣(D.A)而死去的人, 全都是帶著邪見(diṭṭhi)死去的。 他們死時都帶著三種錯誤因素:

錯誤的知覺、錯誤的認識與錯誤的見解。

佛陀說過:

那些一生從未有機會聽聞「空法(suññatā-dhamma)」的人, 都是**帶著邪見死去的**。

那是何等可怕的事啊!

難道你還想再問:「有沒有向上的路呢?」

若你能體證空性(suñnatā),你就已經接近空性涅槃。

而若你從未觀察空性,那你就是朝著**惡趣(apāyas)**墮落而去。

獲得聖法,是非常不容易的事。

每天從六根生起的**不善業**,就是你自己的敵人。

若你一旦墮入惡趣,要再升回人道是極其困難的!

此地(人間)有更多人接近死亡,所以他們更加重要。

「**應當修習**」(bhāvetabba)指的是**觀智道(vipassanā magga)**, 即須反覆修習、培養的觀智。

眾生總是與**善或不善的業**交朋友,

但真正的朋友,是智慧(ñāṇa)!

救度自身的重要性

一九六一年七月二十八日

不修習內觀,將時間浪費在世俗事務上,就像澆灌毒樹。救度自身的任務是聽聞佛法並實踐。

當你年輕時,沒有機會救度自己。隨著年齡增長,家庭事務也會增加,機會也隨之減少。因此,來到這個人世間就像成為一頭人獸(動物)。只有征服煩惱(kilesas),才能從入流者(sotāpanna)到阿羅漢(arahant)。煩惱潛藏在五蘊之中。如果你不知道煩惱的危險(ādīnavas),煩惱會消失嗎?不辨識無常的五蘊,不知苦,不知難以駕馭的無我本質,也無法觀照不淨的本質,煩惱就不會消失。如果你能觀照並辨識這四個因素中的任何一個,你就能征服煩惱。如果你從未切斷五蘊的過程,五蘊就會繼續。當五蘊停止時,渴愛(taṇhā)也停止,那就是涅槃。當兩個輪迴諦(苦諦和集諦)停止,而兩個離輪迴諦(滅諦和道諦)生起時,問題就會結束。

如果你不了解五蘊和煩惱,你就會活在盲目和瘋狂之中。在過去世,你也曾像盲人和瘋子一樣生活(看看大多數人,這一點就很清楚)。正因為如此,我們遭遇了許多危險和困難。不要在修行中懶惰。如果你辨識無常,就不需要任何波羅蜜。無常和道(magga)會送你到涅槃。放下你的家庭和事業,因為它們無法救你。胃裡充滿污穢(尿液和糞便),五蘊上充滿汗水。你攜帶著這個不淨的身體,卻認為它優雅。毫不關心五蘊地修習內觀。被渴愛和執取控制的業是令人厭惡的。所有不了解緣起(D.A.)而死去的人,都是帶著邪見而死。他們帶著錯誤的知覺、認識和觀點這三個錯誤的因素而死。

根據佛陀的說法,那些沒有機會聽聞空性法(suñnatā-dhamma)而死去的人,都是帶著邪見而死。那是多麼可怕啊?還有向上提升的方法嗎?如果你證入空性,你就更接近空性涅槃。從未辨識空性,你已經墮入惡趣。擁有神聖的佛法並不容易。每天,從六根生起的不善業都是自己的敵人。如果你甚至一次墮入惡趣,就很難再上來(回到人道)。這裡有更多的人接近死亡,所以他們更重要。

「Bhāvetabba」意指内觀之道(vipassanā magga,內觀智慧必須多次發展)。 你必須與內觀之道交朋友;眾生與善或惡業交朋友,但真正的朋友是智慧 (ñāṇa)。

Die with Wrong Views

31st July 1961

Today I'll talk about the D.A processes arising from the body. In the Dhammapada, the Buddha warns us that if sakkāya diṭṭhi does not fall away, the four apāya realms are the frequent homes of living beings. Firstly, you have to strip off sakkāya diṭṭhi with knowing. And after that, you must practise dāna, sīla, samatha, and vipassanā. (This point is very important and not just Sayadaw's idea. We can find it in the suttas; but before his time, monks did not emphasise it. This is one of the reasons most Buddhists have wrong views). Every time phassa \rightarrow vedanā \rightarrow taṇhā \rightarrow upādāna arise, you must know them. Every time, if you do not contemplate that they are not a person or a being, they become wrong views. With right attention, diṭṭhi falls off. So yoniso is important. If sakkāya diṭṭhi does not fall away, and one is doing merits, don't take it as "I am happy to die" (as an example, Sayadaw refers to Queen Mallika's story). Only with the right knowledge does the process of the practice become right.

Therefore, whatever dhamma arises from the khandha, follow with knowing. If phassa arises, know it as phassa. If vedanā arises, know it as vedanā. With the knowing, it becomes magga. This magga cuts off kilesas. Knowing of the arising dhamma means knowing by falling away (i.e., wrong view). Discerning anicca is the falling away by contemplating. The first Nibbāna is very important. Even if I tell you that after the attainment, you just sleep (rest).

And then the Dhamma will continue by itself. Now it has the momentum. You learn the method or way here and practise it at home. With the good knowledge (ñāṇa), you can attain it in seven days. (see the biography of The-inn Gu Sayadaw; he became sotāpanna within six days of practice, Two Sides of a Coin) Nibbāna is near – near at your own khandha (the two-arm-length khandha). Not knowing this, at the end of the khandha, people take it as far away. Normally, people think the practice requires doing it bit by bit. There are some who encourage this way of bit-by-bit practice, but it often goes undone.

From the age of 50 to over 50, kamma and ñāṇa are still good, and after 60 it's not good anymore (Buddhists should take this point seriously). Don't be afraid of starving to death. You have to be afraid of dying without ditthi falling away. If you're

like this, you will continue to starve. Your long life will be a long starving life (starving with taṇhā). Upāsakas and upasikas prioritize their businesses first, and the matter of diṭṭhi falling away comes later (i.e., very unwise). Every time taṇhā arises, there is no need to be in fear. You have to be afraid of not knowing when it is arising (it'll connect to clinging). In satipaṭṭhāna, it is mentioned to know when taṇhā is arising. If you know its arising, it becomes magga. With this knowing, sakkāya falls away and diṭṭhi-kamma does not arise.

For example, the male boss Visākhā, after becoming a sotāpanna to anagami, still had taṇhā (i.e., bhava-taṇhā). Going to apāya is not because of taṇhā but because of diṭṭhi. When it arises, observe it with ñāṇa to see if it exists or not. If you see its arising and vanishing, this is abandoning through contemplation. If phassa arises and you miss it, and it leads to vedanā, then you must contemplate the anicca of vedanā. You can close the doors to apāyas only with magga.

Now, I'll show you the way to abandon the doors to apāyas. Only this becomes safety from apāyas. This time, don't follow up to taṇhā, upādāna, and kamma. Instead, contemplate the anicca of the arising of vedanā (three types of feeling). If you can contemplate the ending of vedanā, it is Nibbāna (from the Saṃyutta Nikāya). The ending of the khandha (here, vedanā) is Nibbāna. Khandha is fuel and kilesas are fire. The Buddha taught Aggivaccha brahmin in this way. Before you die, you have to observe and discern the ending of dukkha, which is Nibbāna. It's better to make yourself safe before you die.

帶著邪見而死

1961年7月31日

今天我要講的是從**色身(khandha)中生起的十二緣起(D.A. process)**。

在《法句經》中,佛陀警告我們:

如果「身見」(sakkāya-diṭṭhi)不滅除,四惡趣將成為眾生的常住之所。

首先,必須以「知見(ñāṇa)」來剷除身見,

之後,才是布施、持戒、止禪與觀禪的修習。

(這一點極其重要,不只是尊者的看法,早在《經藏》中便可找到這樣的教導。 但在莫哥尊者之前的年代,許多比丘並未強調此點,這也是大多數佛教徒仍持 邪見的原因之一。)

每當**觸 (phassa) → 受 (vedanā) → 貪 (taṇhā) → 取 (upādāna) **生起時,你必須能如實知見。

若你沒有如理作意,沒有觀照它們**非人、非眾生**的本質,那麼這整個過程就會落入邪見之中。

以正念與正知(yoniso manasikāra)來觀照時,邪見就會滅除, 因此,**如理作意**是關鍵。

如果身見未滅,但你卻在造福業,

那就**別說「我很高興死去」**這種話。 (尊者在此引用了摩利王后〔Queen Mallikā〕的故事為例。)

唯有**以正確之智**觀察與修行, 這修行之道才能成為**正道(magga)**。

因此,無論從色身中生起何種法, 都必須「隨觀而知」。

觸生起時,知是觸;受生起時,知是受。

以「知」來對應,即為道智(magga);

這條道能切斷煩惱(kilesa)。

對於所生起之法的「知」即是「使邪見墮落」的開始。

透過觀照而看見無常(anicca),即是「使邪見墮落的修行」。

初證涅槃(初果)極為重要。

就算我告訴你:「證得之後,就安住、休息吧!」, 只要這個法開始運作,它自己會繼續前行。

你現在學習的方法,要帶回家去修。

只要擁有正確之智(善知善見), 在七天之內就可證果。

(例如緬甸的 **Thae Inn Gu Sayadaw**,他只用了六天就證得須陀洹果,詳見《一體兩面》一書。)

涅槃是很近的——就在你自己的「兩臂長身」之中。

但因為不知這一點, 人們往往以為涅槃「遙不可及」。

一般人總以為修行是要**慢慢積累、逐步進行**的事, 但那種「慢慢來」的方式, 往往到最後什麼也沒做成。

當人過了五十歲、仍在五十幾歲時, 業力與智慧還算健全, 但一旦過了六十歲,這兩樣就開始走下坡了。 (佛教徒應當認真看待這一點。)

不要怕餓死,要怕邪見未滅就死去!

如果你這樣死了,那就只是繼續餓著死去。

你那漫長的生命,將會變成**貪愛之飢餓的漫長折磨**。

現在的在家男居士、女居士都**優先處理事業、放在第一位**, 而把「斷除邪見」這件真正重要的事留到最後, 這樣是極不明智的。

每當**貪愛(taṇhā)**生起時, 你無需害怕貪本身;

你該害怕的是:你不知道它何時生起。

一旦你不知道,就會接著執取。

在《念住經》中,佛陀明白指出:要知道會的生起。

若你知道它的生起,這份「知」就成為「道智」。

這種「正知」能使「身見(sakkāya)」滅除, 也就不會生起以我見為基礎的業(ditthi-kamma)。

例如,居士 **Visākhā** 在證得從須陀洹至不還果(anāgāmi)期間,仍有「有愛(bhava-taṇhā)」。

但墮入惡趣的原因不是貪,而是**邪見(diţṭhi)**。

當貪生起時,

要以智慧(ñāṇa)去觀察它是否存在。

若你能看到它的生起與滅去,這就叫作「以觀行而斷棄」。

若你錯過了觸的觀照,而接著受生起, 那麼你應觀受的無常。

唯有道智(magga)能關閉通往惡趣的大門。

現在,我要給你們指出一條能關閉惡趣之門的方法:

不再跟隨貪、執取與業, **而是觀照受的生滅——三受的無常。**

若你能觀照受的終止,這即是涅槃。

(依據《相應部》經典)

受的止息,即是涅槃;

五蘊(此處指受)是薪柴,煩惱是火焰。

佛陀就是以此譬喻教導阿奇婆遮婆羅門(Aggivaccha Brahmin)。

臨終之前,你必須觀察與辨識苦的止息,這即是涅槃。

在你死之前,讓自己安全下來,才是真正重要的事!

帶著邪見而死

一九六一年七月三十一日

今天我將談論從身體生起的緣起(D.A.)過程。在《法句經》

(Dhammapada)中,佛陀警告我們,如果身見(sakkāya diṭṭhi)沒有脫落,四惡趣將是眾生經常居住的地方。首先,你必須透過了解來去除身見。之後,你必須修習布施(dāna)、持戒(sīla)、止(samatha)和觀(vipassanā)。(這一點非常重要,不僅僅是尊者的想法。我們可以在經文中找到它;但在他那個時代之前,僧侶們並沒有強調它。這是大多數佛教徒持有錯誤見解的原因之一)。每次觸(phassa)→受(vedanā)→愛(taṇhā)→取(upādāna)生起時,你都必須知道它們。每次,如果你不觀照它們不是人或眾生,它們就會變成錯誤的見解。以正確的注意(yoniso),邪見就會脫落。所以如理作意非常重要。如果身見沒有脫落,而一個人正在行善積德,不要認為「我很高興去死」(例

如,尊者提到了摩利迦王后的故事)。只有透過正確的知識,修行的過程才會正確。

因此,無論什麼法從五蘊生起,都要以了解隨之。如果觸生起,就知它是觸。如果受生起,就知它是受。透過了解,它就成為道(magga)。這個道切斷煩惱(kilesas)。了解生起的法意味著透過脫落(即錯誤的見解)來了解。辨識無常是透過觀照而脫落。第一個涅槃非常重要。即使我告訴你,證得之後,你只需睡覺(休息)。然後佛法會自行運作。現在它有了動力。你在這裡學習方法或途徑,然後在家練習。憑藉好的智慧(ñāṇa),你可以在七天內證得。(見忒茵古尊者的傳記;他在六天的修行中成為入流者,《硬幣的兩面》)。涅槃很近——就在你自己的五蘊(兩臂長的五蘊)附近。

不了解這一點,在五蘊的盡頭,人們認為它很遙遠。通常,人們認為修行需要一點一滴地進行。有些人鼓勵這種一點一滴的修行方式,但它往往無法完成。從五十歲到五十多歲,業和智慧仍然很好,六十歲以後就不好了(佛教徒應該認真看待這一點)。不要害怕餓死。你必須害怕在邪見沒有脫落的情況下死去。如果你是這樣,你將會繼續挨餓。你的長壽將是漫長的飢餓生活(被渴愛所飢餓)。優婆塞和優婆夷首先優先考慮他們的事業,而邪見脫落的事情則放在後面(非常不明智)。每次渴愛生起時,不需要感到恐懼。你必須害怕不知道它何時生起(它會與執取相連)。在念處中,提到要了解渴愛何時生起。如果你知道它的生起,它就成為道。透過這種了解,身見脫落,邪見之業就不會生起。

例如,男主人維沙卡,從入流者到不還者之後,仍然有渴愛(即有愛)。墮入 惡趣不是因為渴愛,而是因為邪見。當它生起時,用智慧觀察它是否存在。如 果你看到它的生起和滅去,這就是透過觀照而捨棄。如果觸生起而你錯過了它, 並導致了受,那麼你必須觀照受的無常。你只能透過道來關閉通往惡趣的大門。

現在,我將向你展示捨棄通往惡趣之門的方法。只有這樣才能免於惡趣的危險。這次,不要追隨到渴愛、執取和業。相反,觀照生起的受(三種感受)的無常。如果你能觀照受的止息,那就是涅槃(出自《相應部》)。五蘊(這裡指受)的止息就是涅槃。五蘊是燃料,煩惱是火焰。佛陀就是這樣教導阿耆婆蹉婆羅門的。在你死之前,你必須觀察並辨識苦的止息,那就是涅槃。在你死之前讓自己安全是更好的。

What Is in the Khandha?

10th December 1960

It's important to know what exists in one's khandha. You all will say that the hair of the head, hair of the body, teeth, bones, etc. are there. It's also not wrong because the Buddha also taught about asubha meditation. You have to continue to ask what is existing in these things. There is one thing that still exists in the 32 parts of the body. It's important to know that the I/me enters in each one of them. Only then will sakkāya diṭṭhi fall away. If you have diṭṭhi, it will forbid Nibbāna. With the practice of the meditation on the 32 bodily parts of asubha, if the I and me still do not fall away, it means it's only samatha. If you cannot strip off the I-ness, you won't know about Nibbāna and can't arrive there. It was mentioned clearly in the Majjhimāpaṇṇāsā. Diṭṭhi sticks with the clearly existing things. Head hair really exists. Diṭṭhi sticks to this place.

It also sticks to teeth and hair, such as my hair, my teeth, etc. The Buddha gave a simile to show how important it is to destroy sakkāya diṭṭhi. You have to destroy it first, even when your chest is pierced with a spear and your head hair is burning with fire. The reason behind this is quite clear: with spear and fire, you only die once. But with sakkāya diṭṭhi, you'll continue to die many times to come, and the worst thing is you will be mostly in the realms of apāya as hell beings, animals, and ghosts. Therefore, the Buddha said you have to destroy diṭṭhi first.

Many Buddhas have been arisen as numerous as the sand grains in the Ganges River. It is quite certain that we have encountered some of them. Why are we still not free from Dukkha? Because we have always had one of the sassata and uccheda diṭṭhis with us until now, wandering saṁsāric by carrying heavy burdens (there are many) and continuing walking on the rough road of sickness. With diṭṭhi we don't know the truth. Therefore, we are unable to strip off diṭṭhi. In the Aṅguttara Nikāya, the Buddha mentioned that if having diṭṭhi, we cannot get the knowledge according to truth – saccanulomika ñāṇa. Wandering in saṁsāra is not due to little merits from dāna, sīla, and samatha, but because diṭṭhi has not fallen off, so we have not attained Nibbāna.

(And then Sayadaw talked about Aggivaccha Brahmin. He asked 10 questions to the Buddha. The main points were two things: mind and body as loka and as

person and being. All 10 of them were included in these two wrong views. Even though he was in the Buddha's time, he did not know about suññatā, paññatti, and paramattha dhammas, which caused them to arise. The majority of Buddhists today are also in the same way.)

The importance of the last question was: "Ven. Sir, please tell me your view?" The answer was: "If you discern the arising and passing away of the five khandhas, this is right view."

Q: What is the benefit of this view? Continuously seeing the arising of phenomena makes one free from the view of annihilationism, and continuously seeing the vanishing phenomena makes one free from the view of eternalism.

A: If you have this right view, taṇhā, māna, and diṭṭhi will cease. Saṁsāra will be cut off. This is the view that leads to Nibbāna.

Q: With taṇhā, māna, and diṭṭhi ceased, where does this person go after death? The brahmin asked with diṭṭhi again. Not understanding of dependent co-arising leads to diṭṭhi, and one does not understand Nibbāna and does not appreciate it.

五蘊之中有何物?

1960年12月10日

了解自身**五蘊(khandha)中存在的是什麼**,這一點極為重要。

你們都會說:頭髮、身體毛髮、牙齒、骨頭等等都存在。

這樣的回答也沒有錯,因為佛陀也曾教導關於不淨觀(asubha bhāvanā)。

但你必須進一步追問:在這些東西裡,到底還有什麼存在?

其中仍然存在著一樣重要的東西——

就是「我/我所(I/me)」潛藏在每一項之中。

唯有如此,**身見(sakkāya-diṭṭhi)**才會斷除。

若仍有「我見」,這就會阻礙你通往涅槃之路。

即使你修習了不淨觀,觀察身體三十二分(頭髮、牙齒、骨等),但如果那個「我」與「我所」尚未斷除,

那也只是止禪 (samatha) 而非觀智 (vipassanā)。

如果你無法剝除「我性」,你便不會知道涅槃為何, 更不可能抵達涅槃。

這一點在《中部·中五十經》裡已經說得非常清楚。

邪見(ditthi) **常常依附在那些「顯然存在的東西**」上。

例如:「頭髮真的存在」,所以「我見」就會附著於此。 它也會依附在牙齒與毛髮上,像是——「**我的頭髮、我的牙齒**」等等。

佛陀為了顯示斷除「身見」的重要性,給出了一個譬喻:

即使胸口被長矛刺穿、頭髮被火燃燒,

你也應該優先斷除身見!

這其中的理由非常明確:

被矛刺死與火燒死, 你只會死一次;

但如果有「身見」,你就會不斷死去輪迴——

而且大多數會在**四惡趣(地獄、畜生、餓鬼、阿修羅)**之中!

因此佛陀說:

首先、最要緊的事,就是滅除「我見」。

佛陀們出現過無數多次,如恆河沙數。

我們幾乎可以確定:自己過去世中曾遇過其中一些佛陀。

那麼,為什麼我們到現在仍未脫離苦輪?

因為從過去直到現在,

我們總是執著於兩種邪見之一——

常見(sassata-diţthi)與斷見(uccheda-diţthi),

一再於輪迴中流轉,

背負沉重的負擔,在疾病之道上顛沛流離。

有了邪見,便無法如實知見真理,

也就無法剝除「我見」。

在《增支部》中,佛陀曾提到:

若有邪見存在,就無法生起順真理智(saccānulomika ñāṇa)。

在輪迴中流轉,不是因為缺乏布施、持戒與止禪等功德,

而是因為**「邪見尚未滅除」,因此無法證入涅槃。**

接下來尊者談到了阿奇婆遮婆羅門(Aggivaccha Brahmin):

他向佛陀提出十個問題,

其實這些問題的核心只有兩個重點:

- 一是將身心(名色)誤認為世界(loka),
- 二是將身心誤認為人與眾生。

這十個問題,都是建立在這兩種邪見之上。

即使他生活在佛陀時代,

也仍未了知空(suññatā)、假名(paññatti)、與究竟法(paramattha dhamma)的區別,

所以才會執著錯見。

事實上,現在大多數的佛教徒亦是如此。

其中最重要的一個問題是:

「尊者!請告訴我您的見解是什麼?」

佛陀的回答是:

「若你能觀察五蘊的生起與滅去,這就是正見(sammā-diṭṭhi)。」

問:此見解有何利益?

不斷觀察「生起」的現象,會斷除斷見;不斷觀察「滅去」的現象,會斷除常見。

答:若你有這樣的正見,

則貪(taṇhā)、慢(māna)、與我見(diṭṭhi)將會止息。

輪迴亦將止息。

這便是**通往涅槃的正見**。

問:若貪、慢、見皆滅,這個人死後去哪裡?

這個問題,其實是婆羅門又一次落入邪見的提問。

對緣起法 (Paţiccasamuppāda) 不了解,

就會落入邪見,

也就不會理解涅槃,甚至不懂得欣賞涅槃。

五蘊中是什麼?

一九六〇年十二月十日

了解自身五蘊中存在什麼非常重要。你們都會說,頭髮、體毛、牙齒、骨骼等等都在那裡。這也沒有錯,因為佛陀也教導過不淨觀(asubha meditation)。你

必須繼續追問,在這些事物中還存在什麼。在身體的三十二個部分中,仍然存在著一樣東西。了解「我/我的」進入了它們每一個之中非常重要。只有這樣,身見(sakkāya diṭṭhi)才會脫落。如果你有邪見(diṭṭhi),它將會阻礙涅槃。透過修習三十二身分的不淨觀,如果「我」和「我的」仍然沒有脫落,那就意味著它只是奢摩他(samatha)。

如果你無法去除「我」的觀念,你將不會了解涅槃,也無法到達那裡。《中部經典》(Majjhimāpaṇṇāsā)中已清楚提及。邪見依附於明顯存在的事物。頭髮確實存在。邪見依附於這個地方。它也依附於牙齒和頭髮,例如我的頭髮,我的牙齒等等。佛陀用一個比喻來說明摧毀身見的重要性。你必須首先摧毀它,即使你的胸膛被矛刺穿,你的頭髮被火燃燒。其背後的理由很清楚:被矛刺穿和被火燒傷,你只會死一次。但是有了身見,你將會在未來繼續死亡許多次,而最糟糕的是,你將大多處於惡趣,成為地獄眾生、動物和鬼魂。因此,佛陀說你必須首先摧毀邪見。

已經有許多佛陀出現,數量如同恆河沙粒。我們很肯定曾經遇到過他們中的一些。為什麼我們仍然沒有從苦中解脫出來?因為直到現在,我們一直都帶著常見(sassata)或斷見(uccheda)之一,背負著沉重的負擔(有很多),並繼續行走在疾病的崎嶇道路上,在輪迴中漂泊。有了邪見,我們就不知道真理。因此,我們無法去除邪見。《增支部》(Aṅguttara Nikāya)中,佛陀提到,如果持有邪見,我們就無法獲得符合真理的知識——隨順真理智(saccanulomika ñāṇa)。在輪迴中漂泊並非由於布施、持戒和止的功德太少,而是因為邪見沒有脫落,所以我們沒有證得涅槃。

(然後尊者談到了阿耆婆蹉婆羅門。他向佛陀提出了十個問題。要點是兩件事: 名色(mind and body)作為世間(loka)和作為人與眾生。所有十個問題都包 含在這兩個錯誤的見解中。即使他處於佛陀的時代,他也不知道空性 (suññatā)、施設(paññatti)和勝義諦(paramattha dhammas),這導致了這 些錯誤見解的產生。今天大多數佛教徒也以同樣的方式。)

最後一個問題的重要性在於:「世尊,請告訴我您的見解?」答案是:「如果你辨識五蘊的生起和滅去,這就是正見。」

問:這種見解有什麼好處?持續看到現象的生起使人從斷滅見中解脫出來,持續看到現象的滅去使人從常見中解脫出來。

答:如果你持有這種正見,渴愛、慢和邪見將會止息。輪迴將會被切斷。這是 導向涅槃的見解。

問:隨著渴愛、慢和邪見的止息,這個人在死後會去哪裡?婆羅門再次帶著邪 見發問。不理解緣起導致邪見,並且不理解涅槃,也不會珍視它。

The Four Dangers

12th December 1960

It's important to know the four dangers mentioned by the Buddha in Aṅguttara Nikāya. Only by knowing about the dangers will you shun them. Once you know the place is not good, you will want to change the place. There are four dangers: birth, ageing, sickness, and death. Clinging to one's khandha, family members, and wealth is the same as a vulture liking or loving the putrid carcass of a dead dog. Living beings are happy wherever they are. Being happy with dangers is samudaya taṇhā. Being pushed down to dangers is ignorance. Encountering the four dangers is due to avijjā and saṅkhāra. If there is no avijjā and saṅkhāra, knowledge arises and the condition becomes unconditioned.

Avijjā and saṅkhāra are also like someone who is blind, and when walking, they tumble down and get injuries. Here, avijjā is not seeing (blindness); saṅkhāra is action (walking); injuries are jāti, jarā, vyādhi, and maraṇa.

In practising vipassanā, don't delay the practice until tomorrow or the day after tomorrow. Days, months, and years are related to the sun and moon; they will constantly change until the world is destroyed. (Doomsday with darkness is where humans' kilesas excel them.) Your khandhas are not like this. You can't delay or extend the time. Therefore, you have to search for a parting road (from the defiled path to the purified path) before arriving at sickness.

四種危險

1960年12月12日

佛陀在《增支部》(Aṅguttara Nikāya)中所說的**四種危險**,是每個人都應該清楚瞭解的。

唯有知道這些危險的存在,才會生起**遠離之心**。 當你知道某個地方危險,你自然會想要換個地方離開。

佛陀所指出的四種危險是:

生、老、病、死。

執取自身的五蘊、家庭成員與財富,

就如同一隻禿鷹喜愛、貪愛一具腐爛的死狗屍體。

眾生無論身在何處,總是自得其樂;

但對危險生起歡喜,實則就是集諦中的愛(samudaya taṇhā)。

而被推落於危險之中的主因,則是無明(avijjā)。

會一再遭遇這四種危險的根本,是無明與行(avijjā and saṅkhāra)。若無無明與行,就會有智慧(ñāṇa)的生起,條件法就會轉變為無為法(非條件性)。

無明與行就像是一個瞎子,

當他起身行走時,會因為看不見而跌倒,導致受傷。

在這個比喻中:

- 無明即是「看不見」(blindness);
- **行**是「行動」(walking);
- 而受傷則代表著生(jāti)、老(jarā)、病(vyādhi)、死 (maraṇa)。

在修習**內觀(vipassanā)**時,

切勿拖延說「等明天、等後天再來修」。

日、月、年這些時間,都是依靠太陽與月亮的運行來計算的, 它們會不斷變化,直至世界毀滅。

(當世界終結於黑暗之際,

那正是**眾生的煩惱**到了極點之時。)

但你的**五蘊**不是那樣的(它不會等你)。 你無法延緩、也無法拖延它的變化。

因此,**在生病到來之前**, 你應當趁早尋找一條**離別之路**—— 從雜染的道路轉向清淨之道。

四種危險

一九六〇年十二月十二日

了解佛陀在《增支部》(Aṅguttara Nikāya)中提到的四種危險非常重要。只有了解這些危險,你才會避開它們。一旦你知道某個地方不好,你就會想要換個地方。有四種危險:生、老、病、死。執著於自己的五蘊、家人和財富,就像禿鷹喜歡或愛上一隻腐爛的死狗的屍體一樣。眾生安於他們所處的任何地方。樂於危險是集諦的渴愛(samudaya taṇhā)。被推向危險是無明。遭遇這四種危險是由於無明(avijjā)和行(saṅkhāra)。如果沒有無明和行,智慧就會生起,有條件的就會變成無條件的。

無明和行也像一個盲人,走路時跌倒並受傷。在這裡,無明是不見(盲),行是行動(走路),受傷是生、老、病、死(jāti, jarā, vyādhi, maraṇa)。

在修習內觀(vipassanā)時,不要將修行延遲到明天或後天。日、月、年與太陽和月亮有關;它們將不斷變化,直到世界毀滅。(末日黑暗是人類煩惱超越他們的地方。)你的五蘊不是這樣的。你不能延遲或延長時間。因此,你必須在到達疾病之前,尋找一條分道揚鑣的道路(從染污的道路到清淨的道路)。

For the Cessation of Existence

6th August 1961

Whatever merits you are doing, don't do it for a good existence. This is because you don't know about the truth. After death, and birth arises, what goodness is there? From dukkha, it connects to dukkha only. I am emphatically urging you to practise for the cessation of existence. Transmigration of existence (existence connects existence) is sassata-diṭṭhi. Taking it as good is not knowing dukkha sacca. Where is the goodness in that? Transmigration in existences is the greatest fault.

[Note: The above paragraph is very good for thorough contemplation. Very few Buddhist monks teach the essence of Buddhism. Ledi Sayadawgyi and Mogok Sayadaw are very good examples. Even though we do not have the chance to know Ledi Sayadaw's Dhamma talks, we still have the chances to read and study his Dhamma Dīpanīs and Dhamma poems. Sayadawgyi was a great Dhamma poet. He wrote some of these in his life, quite well known to Burmese Buddhists. The poems are profound and deep, but no one has translated them yet.]

Only the arahant can abandon sukha saññā and sukha citta (this is related to the 12 inversions). Only a once-returner and a nonreturner can abandon subha saññā. Do you know how broad the inversions are? If you don't abandon the inversion of view with knowledge (ñāta pariññā), practicing will not help you attain Dhamma. You won't even get the saccanulomika ñāṇa, and Nibbāna will be far away. The person is only one, but with 12 kinds of craziness, they become unbalanced. He is going into craziness one by one. Patacara was a diṭṭhummattaka – lunatic with view. In saṁsāra, beings are in shame, and disadvantage is created by diṭṭhi. Insight means observing one's own death. The smell of a flower and the nose coming into contact is phassa; at that moment, one is alive with phassa. Phassa conditions vedanā. With the cessation of phassa, vedanā arises; at that moment, one is alive with vedanā. Does vedanā arise by itself? Phassa gives it the chance to arise. If you discern the vanishing phenomenon, you are free from the sassata-view (permanent). With the discernment of the causes which lead to results, you are free from the uccheda-view.

If you know this and die unexpectedly, you will not fall into apāyas in the next life because you will have become a cūļa-sotāpanna. People think that because of good kamma they are alive. In reality, they are alive with the arising mind. (It's more

true that the result of kamma is not yet expired; therefore, the mental process is still going on.)

為了止息「有」而修

1961年8月6日

無論你造作什麼善業,**都不要為了獲得美好的未來有而造作**。 因為這表示你尚未認識真理。

死後又再生起新的「有」(bhava), 這樣有什麼善可言?

從苦而來的,仍然只會與苦相連。

因此,我鄭重地呼籲各位,應修行為的是止息「有」的生起。

有的輪轉(bhava saṃsāra),一「有」連接另一「有」, 就是**常見**(sassata-diṭṭhi)。

若認為這是好的,便是不知「苦諦」(dukkha sacca)。 那當中有什麼可取的好處呢?

於輪迴之中流轉不止,是最嚴重的過失。

★註:

上段法語極值得深入觀察思惟。

很少有比丘能如此直指佛法的核心。

例如:**勒棣大師(Ledi Sayadawgyi)與莫哥尊者**就是極佳典範。 雖然我們沒有機緣聽聞勒棣大師的口頭開示,但仍能研讀他留下的 《法光集》(Dhamma Dīpanī)與多首法義詩偈。 他是一位偉大的法詩詩人,作品深刻、內涵豐富, 然而至今尚無人將之翻譯為英文或中文。

唯有阿羅漢能斷除樂想(sukha saññā) 與樂心(sukha citta),

這涉及到「十二種顛倒」(vipallāsa)。

只有一來果與不還果者才能斷除淨想(subha saññā)。 你知道顛倒遍佈得有多廣嗎?

如果不以「知遍智」(ñāta pariññā)斷除見解上的顛倒,那麼再怎麼修行,也無法證得法。

你甚至得不到「**隨順於真理的智慧**」(saccanulomika ñāṇa), 涅槃也將遙不可及。

一個人,因為十二種瘋狂顛倒,而變得精神錯亂。

他是一個接一個地陷入顛倒中。

例如:跋陀遮羅(Patacārā)就是一位「見解上的瘋子」 (diṭṭhummattaka)。

在無盡的輪迴中,眾生長期處於羞愧與危險中, 這些過患都來自於**邪見(diţhi)**。

內觀(vipassanā)的意義是什麼?

就是觀察自己的死亡。

花香與鼻子接觸,是觸(phassa); 在那一刻,你是與觸一同活著。

觸緣生受 (vedanā);

觸滅時,受生起;那時你是活在受之中。

受是否會無因生起?

不是的,**是觸賦予它生起的機會。**

如果你能**辨知「滅去」的現象**, 你便能**脫離「常見」的執著(sassata-view)**。

若你能**洞察導致果報的因緣條件**,你也將遠離「斷見」(uccheda-view)。

若你能這樣觀照,即使是意外死亡,

來世也不會隨入惡趣,

因為你將已成為一位**「小入流者」(cūḷa-sotāpanna)**。

人們常認為是因為善業的力量而活著,

但實際上,是因為心的生起而活著。

(更準確地說,是因為業報的作用尚未耗盡,

所以名色的心續還在運行。)

為了存在的止息

一九六一年八月六日

無論你做什麼功德,都不要為了好的存在而做。這是因為你不知道真理。死後,當出生再次生起,有什麼好處呢?從苦,它只會連接到苦。我鄭重地敦促你為了存在的止息而修行。存在的輪迴(存在連接存在)是常見(sassata-diṭṭhi)。認為它是好的就是不知道苦諦。那裡有什麼好處呢?在諸有中輪迴是最大的過失。

[註:以上這一段非常適合深入觀照。很少有佛教僧侶教導佛教的精髓。雷迪尊者(Ledi Sayadawgyi)和莫哥尊者(Mogok Sayadaw)是非常好的例子。即使我們沒有機會了解雷迪尊者的佛法開示,我們仍然有機會閱讀和研究他的《佛法明燈》(Dhamma Dīpanīs)和佛法詩。尊者是一位偉大的佛法詩人。他一生

中寫了一些,在緬甸佛教徒中相當有名。這些詩深刻而深奧,但尚未有人翻譯。]

只有阿羅漢才能捨棄樂想(sukha saññā)和樂心(sukha citta)(這與十二顛倒有關)。只有一來者和不還者才能捨棄淨想(subha saññā)。你知道顛倒有多廣泛嗎?如果你不以智慧(ñāta pariññā)捨棄見顛倒,修行將無法幫助你證得佛法。你甚至無法獲得隨順真理智(saccanulomika ñāṇa),涅槃將遙不可及。這個人只有一個,但有了十二種瘋狂,他們就會變得不平衡。他正一個接一個地陷入瘋狂。帕塔查拉(Patacara)是一個見顛倒者(diṭṭhummattaka)——有見的瘋子。在輪迴中,眾生感到羞恥,而邪見(diṭṭhi)造成了不利。內觀意味著觀察自己的死亡。花的香味和鼻子接觸是觸(phassa);在那一刻,一個人活在觸之中。觸緣受(vedanā)。隨著觸的止息,受生起;在那一刻,一個人活在受之中。受會自行生起嗎?觸給予它生起的機會。如果你辨識消失的現象,你就從常見(sassata-view,永恆)中解脫出來。透過辨識導致結果的原因,你就從斷見(uccheda-view)中解脫出來。

如果你知道這一點並意外死亡,你將不會在來世墮入惡趣,因為你將成為一個小人流者(cūla-sotāpanna)。人們認為他們因為善業而活著。實際上,他們是隨著生起的心而活著。(更真實的是,業的果報尚未到期;因此,心理過程仍在繼續。)

Dhamma Increasing of Dukkha

7th August 1961

Dhamma increasing one's dukkha are wrong perception, wrong knowing, and wrong viewing of things.

- (1) With wrong perception taṇhā/diṭṭhi arises →
- (2) With wrong knowing leads to wrong clinging/ditthupādāna →
- ③ With wrong action \rightarrow wrong attaining, it becomes dukkha sacca. So a wrong perception connects two lives. Each day, how many perceptions of son, daughter, husband, and wife arise? They are uncountable. The ditthi that controls the arising of kammas is also uncountable, as are the seeds to apāyas. You have come to this human world for a visit, and after death you will go to apāyas. All these wrong things must be contemplated forcefully with insight knowledge. You have to practice like rubbing two pieces of bamboo until fire comes out. Your wrongness is so strong and higher than Mount Meru. You have to look after your health while practicing with effort. The Buddha himself mentioned that with good health one would achieve it. Right perception \rightarrow right knowing \rightarrow right clinging \rightarrow right effort

If you separate the five khandhas with the satipaṭṭhāna, you will get four of them. Whatever it may be, at last, it goes into the truth. Whatever khandha or satipaṭṭhāna you observe, you only discern anicca. Anicca is dukkha sacca. All the five khandhas are inside dukkha sacca. Anicca, dukkha, and anatta are teaching people accordingly. In reality, it's only dukkha sacca.

法的增苦

1961年8月7日

會讓苦增長的「法」,指的是:錯誤的知覺、錯誤的認識,以及錯誤的見解。

1. **因錯誤的知覺**(saññā),**渴愛與邪見(tanhā / ditthi)**就會生起。

- 2. **因錯誤的認識**(ñāṇa),**錯誤的執取與見取(diṭṭhupādāna)**就會生起。
- 3. 接著導致錯誤的行為與錯誤的成就,最終形成苦諦(dukkha sacca)。

也就是說,一個錯誤的知覺可以連結兩生(今生與來生)。

請想想:你每天生起多少次「兒子、女兒、丈夫、妻子」的知覺? 這些錯誤的知覺是無法計數的。

同樣地,在業生起時主導的邪見(diṭṭhi)也無法計數,這些都如同種子,通向惡趣(apāya)。

你來到人世間只是一趟短暫的訪客, 而**死後大多數人將回到惡趣**。

所有這些錯誤,都必須以內觀智慧強力地加以觀照與對治。

修行時,**要像用兩塊竹片摩擦生火般堅持不懈地努力。** 因為你的錯誤與執著,**強過須彌山(Mount Meru)!**

在這條修行路上,**要好好照顧身體健康並持續努力。** 佛陀親口說過:只**要健康良好,就能達成日標。**

正確的知覺→正確的認識→正確的執取→正確的精進

若你能以**四念處(satipaṭṭhāna)**分離觀察五蘊,你將獲得四種念處的修行成果。

無論你觀察哪一蘊或哪一念處,最終都會導向真理(sacca)。

你會觀察到的,不是別的,**就是「無常(anicca)」。** 「無常」即是「苦諦」(dukkha sacca)。

五蘊全都涵蓋於「苦諦」之中。

無常(anicca)、苦(dukkha)、無我(anatta)會各自以適合的方式對行者說法,

然而從真實義來說,一切只是「苦諦」罷了。

增長苦的法

一九六一年八月七日

增長個人痛苦的法是錯誤的知覺、錯誤的認識和對事物的錯誤見解。

- ① 由於錯誤的知覺,渴愛/邪見生起→
- ② 錯誤的認識導致錯誤的執取/見取→
- ③ 錯誤的行為→錯誤的獲得,這就成了苦諦。因此,一個錯誤的知覺連接了兩世。每天,有多少關於兒子、女兒、丈夫和妻子的知覺生起?它們是數不清的。控制業生起的邪見也是數不清的,就像通往惡趣的種子一樣。你來到這個人世間只是短暫的拜訪,死後你將會去惡趣。所有這些錯誤的事情都必須以內觀智慧強有力地觀照。你必須像摩擦兩塊竹子直到生火一樣修行。你的錯誤如此強大,高於須彌山。你必須在努力修行的同時照顧好自己的健康。佛陀自己提到,有了好的健康才能成就。正知覺→正認識→正執取→正精進

如果你以四念處分離五蘊,你將會得到其中的四個。無論它是什麼,最終都會歸於真理。無論你觀察哪個五蘊或哪個念處,你都只會辨識無常。無常是苦諦。所有五蘊都在苦諦之中。無常、苦和無我都在相應地教導人們。實際上,只有苦諦。

The Most Fearful Thing

19th August 1961

Wrong view is the most fearful thing. Before you're doing dāna and sīla, you have to clear away three wrong views (i.e., sakkāya, sassata, and uccheda-diṭṭhis). As a Buddhist, you may have a wrong view, and taking oneself as not having it is the worst thing. If you go and ask the practitioners, what is Nibbāna? If they answer with "I don't know," then they are overwhelmed by ignorance. Having general knowledge (bahussuta) and answering as — "Nibbāna has nothing exists after the cessation of mind and body process," this is answering with uccheda-diṭṭhi. Ordinary not knowing is not a problem, but knowing with uccheda-diṭṭhi is fearful. Most of you are coming from hells (this is not an exaggeration). At the time of suffering in hells, you were making the determination that after freeing from hells and arriving in the human realm, "I'll do the task of ending of dukkha." After you arrive here, you are deceived by the surroundings and waste your time (this point all Buddhists should contemplate seriously).

Nibbāna has the characteristic of peacefulness. It is extinct from kilesa fire and khandha fuel, or they do not exist there. When talking about Nibbāna, the appreciation will come only by knowing dukkha sacca clearly

[This is one of the main reasons most humans have wrong views and don't like it. With an understanding of dukkha comes understanding and appreciation of Nibbāna. For worldlings, their craziness for sensual pleasures has no limits. For the Buddha and ariya-sāvakas, these pleasures are filthy. They are like the yellowish, smelly, disgusting stuff in the pit toilet is for the white worms.]

No appreciation of Nibbāna comes from no appreciation of dukkha.

(Sayadaw continues to explain the vipassanā process) At the time of discerning anicca, the yogi knows the fuel and fire are burning together. They are together up to the knowledge of disenchantment. And then, with the ending of anicca, dukkha sacca, the yogi sees the place of peacefulness. Nibbāna is really existent; the yogi knows about the existence of peace. This is the cessation of khandha fuel and kilesa fire. The khandhas are continuously arising as part of the continuing process of vipāka vaṭṭa khandhas. It is like fuel (khandhas) and fire (kilesas) which are burning and disappearing. This is the impermanence of the khandhas, continuously arising.

With the knowing of these Dhamma, the doors to apāya are closed for one life (i.e., for the next life).

最可怖之事

1961年8月19日

錯見(Ditthi)是世間最可怕的事。

在你開始修行布施(dāna)與持戒(sīla)之前,**必須先剷除三種邪見:身見** (sakkāya diṭṭhi)、常見(sassata diṭṭhi)與斷見(uccheda diṭṭhi)。

即使是佛教徒,也仍可能懷抱邪見,**而錯誤地認為自己沒有邪見,則是最嚴重** 的問題。

若你去問某位修行者:「什麼是涅槃(Nibbāna)?」 他若回答:「我不知道。」那便是被無明(avijjā)所壓制。

若他具有博學知識(bahussuta),卻回答說:「涅槃是在身心(名色)止滅後什麼也不存在了。」

那就是以**斷見(uccheda diṭṭhi)**作答--**這種錯誤的知解才是真正可怕的事**。

普通的「不知道」並不是問題,

但「以邪見所知」的錯誤才是危險之源。

你們多數人是從地獄(niraya)來的,這並非誇張。

在你們於地獄受苦時,曾發願:

「若我從地獄解脫,得以生於人道,必將完成滅苦之事。」

然而,一旦你抵達此人世,**便被周遭的境界欺瞞,浪費了寶貴的時光。** (此點對一切佛教徒而言都極值得深思!) 涅槃的特性是**寂靜**(santi-lakkhana)。

在涅槃中,煩惱之火(kilesa-aggi)與蘊之薪柴(khandha-upādāna)皆已止息,不再存在。

談論涅槃時,只有明見苦諦(dukkha sacca)之人,才能生起對涅槃的敬仰與 欣賞。

這正是多數人對涅槃無感,甚至懷抱邪見的根本原因。因為他們不了解「苦」,自然也無法體會「滅」。

凡夫對咸官樂著有無盡的瘋狂貪求;

但對佛陀與聖弟子而言,**這些欲樂如同廁坑中那泛黃惡臭、令人作嘔之物,唯** 有蛆蟲才會貪喜。

對涅槃毫無欣賞,是因為對「苦」亦無認識與厭離。

(尊者接著解說內觀的歷程)

當行者**觀照無常(anicca)時,

他將清楚見到:蘊之薪柴與煩惱之火一同燃燒——

這樣的燃燒會持續直到行者達到厭離智 (nibbidā ñāṇa)**為止。

接著,當無常與苦諦終止時,

行者便證見「寂靜之地」,即是涅槃。

涅槃確實存在,

是「平靜」的真實體驗。

行者知見到的是蘊之薪柴與煩惱之火的止息。

五蘊之生起,是業果輪迴(vipāka vaṭṭa khandha)的延續性過程。

如同薪柴與火一同燃燒後又熄滅,

蕴法無常地一再生滅——

這就是**五蘊的生滅性**,持續而不斷。

若能如實知見此等法,

即便只是一生的時光,也足以關閉墮入惡趣(apāya)的門戶。

最可怕的事

一九六一年八月十九日

邪見是最可怕的事。在你布施和持戒之前,你必須清除三種邪見(即身見、常見和斷見)。作為佛教徒,你可能持有錯誤的見解,而認為自己沒有錯誤的見解是最糟糕的事。如果你去問修行者,什麼是涅槃?如果他們回答「我不知道」,那麼他們就被無明所淹沒了。擁有廣泛的知識(bahussuta)並回答說一一「涅槃是在身心過程止息後什麼都不存在的狀態」,這就是以斷見回答。普通的不知道不是問題,但是以斷見來知道是可怕的。

你們大多數人都是從地獄來的(這並非誇大其詞)。在地獄受苦時,你們曾下定決心,從地獄解脫並來到人間後,「我將完成止息痛苦的任務。」來到這裡之後,你們卻被周圍的環境所迷惑,浪費了時間(所有佛教徒都應該認真思考這一點)。

涅槃具有寂靜的特徵。它從煩惱之火和五蘊的燃料中熄滅,或者它們在那裡根本不存在。談論涅槃時,只有清楚地了解苦諦,才會產生讚賞。

[這是大多數人持有錯誤見解並且不喜歡它的主要原因之一。理解痛苦帶來對涅槃的理解和讚賞。對於凡夫來說,他們對感官享樂的瘋狂是沒有止境的。對於佛陀和聖弟子來說,這些快樂是污穢的。它們就像坑式廁所裡那些黃色、惡臭、令人作嘔的東西對於白色的蠕蟲一樣。]

不讚賞苦,就不會讚賞涅槃。(尊者繼續解釋內觀的過程)

在辨識無常時,瑜伽行者知道燃料和火焰正在一起燃燒。它們一直在一起,直到生起厭離的智慧。然後,隨著無常、苦諦的止息,瑜伽行者看到寂靜之處。 涅槃是真實存在的;瑜伽行者知道寂靜的存在。這是五蘊的燃料和煩惱之火的 止息。五蘊作為果報輪迴蘊持續過程的一部分不斷生起。它就像燃料(五蘊)和火焰(煩惱)正在燃燒和消失。這是五蘊的無常,不斷地生起。

透過了解這些佛法,通往惡趣的大門在一生中(即來生)被關閉。

The Essence of the Buddha Sāsana

21st September 1961

The Buddha would select what kind of Dhamma is the essence of his sāsana. The first person seeking heartwood came to a great tree, standing and possessed of heartwood. He would cut off its twigs and leaves and take them away, thinking of it as heartwood. The second person cut off its outer bark, thinking it was heartwood. The third person cut off its inner bark. The fourth person cut off its sapwood, thinking it was heartwood. The fifth person cut off its heartwood and took it away. (based on the discourse on the Simile of the Heartwood (Majjhima Nikāya) The Buddha will be glad only if we can find the essence of Dhamma which cannot be destroyed. We have to think about, by using the five similes, what kinds of Dhamma we are doing within the sāsana?

If you are listening to Dhamma talks only for merits, it is like the first person taking twigs and leaves. This refers to all works for good destination (good rebirth).

Path knowledge are unbroken and imperishable Dhamma. These are the real essence – the heartwood. Sīla leads to long life and gives the result of being free from dangers. In the sāsana, there are people who only have contentment with sīla (even these people are not many; see the chaos and problems in societies up to the international level). Some practise samatha and gain some psychic phenomena, but they are content with it. The Buddha did not praise them. Some practise samatha and gain jhānic abhiñña. At the time of the near doomsday, everyone attains jhānas and is able to fly in the air and dive into the earth. The fifth person is like those who practise the noble eight-fold path and realise magga and phala. They are people practising to attain the nine supramundane dhammas: four path knowledges, four fruits, and NIBBĀNA. The other practices with results can be destroyed by kammas and can lead to apāyas (i.e., they are uncertain because of the complicated working of kamma). These are broken because they have no essence in them. I'm not finding faults with them. In looking for the essence of Dhamma, these are not the ESSENCE, so I have to say this.

If you want to look for the essence of Dhamma, you must start from vipassanā. If you still don't have the path and fruit knowledge, you have to note that "I still don't have the essence of Dhamma yet." Then your practice can be broken, perish, and

disappear (this is one of the reasons we're still in samsāra). It's quite stable if you attain the first path. It only has seven lives to go (at most, this depends on the person). Even an arahant was fried with oil by a king's order. He didn't have defilements, but he still had to suffer because of the khandha that existed. (I have no knowledge about this story).

Another example is Mahā-moggallāna (a well -known incident to most Buddhists). He was beaten by bandits.

If you are still satisfied with the first path, then you still want to be beaten (like Mahā-moggallāna). You still want to die in a serious way. The dangers of the khandha are very bad indeed. Some Buddhists want to be like Visākhā (female boss) and Sakka, king of gods (as sotāpanna who enjoy sensual pleasures) because they think they are free from the apāyas. This shows people still can't see the dangers and faults of the burdened khandhas. There's no danger and fault greater than the khandhas (warned by the Buddha also).

If you attain the first path, it's better to climb upward.

佛教教法的精髓

1961年9月21日

佛陀會選擇什麼樣的法作為他教法(sāsana)的精髓?第一個尋求心材(心材 =精髓)的人來到一棵巨大的樹前,這棵樹挺拔堅固並具有心材。他砍下枝葉, 並以為那是心材。第二人則剝取了外皮,以為那是心材。第三人剝下內皮。第 四人砍下邊材(sapwood),認為那是心材。第五人才真正砍取了心材並將之 帶走。

(這是根據《中部》中的〈心材喻經〉)

佛陀會欣慰,只有當我們能找到那不可摧毀的法之精髓。我們必須以這五個譬喻來思惟:我們在佛教教法中所修行的,是屬於哪一類?

若你聽法只是為了修福、得功德,那就如同第一人,取走的是枝葉。這代表一切為了善趣(善趣再生)而做的業行。

道智(magga ñāṇa)是不壞與不可摧毀的法,這才是真正的精髓——也就是心材。持戒能得長壽,帶來免於危難的果報。在教法中,有些人只滿足於持戒(事實上,這樣的人也不多;看看今日社會乃至國際的混亂與問題就知道)。也有人修習止禪,獲得某些神通現象,便以此為滿足。佛陀並不稱讚他們。有些人修止禪得禪那與神通,在世界末日時,每個人都能得禪那、在空中飛行、入地潛行。

第五人則如同那些修習八聖道、證得道與果的人。他們修行是為了證得九種出世間法:四道、四果與涅槃(NIBBĀNA)。其他修行所得的果報,都可能被業所摧毀,甚至導向惡趣(因為業的運作極為複雜而無常)。這些法是可壞的,因為它們缺乏真正的精髓。我並非在批評它們。但當談及尋找教法的精髓時,這些法並非真正的「精髓」,因此我必須這樣說。

若你想尋找教法的精髓,就必須從毘婆舍那(vipassanā)開始。如果你尚未證得道與果的智慧,那麼你應當警覺:「我尚未擁有佛法的精髓。」那麼你的修行仍可能破壞、消失、毀滅。(這正是我們還在輪迴中的原因之一。)若你證得初道(sotāpatti-magga),那就穩固多了。最多只剩七生(視人而異)。

即便是阿羅漢,也曾因國王的命令被熱油燒煮。他雖無煩惱,卻仍因存在的色身而受苦。(我對此故事不太清楚。)

另一個例子是大目犍連尊者(這是多數佛弟子熟知的事件),他遭盜匪毆打而死。

如果你對初道仍然滿足,那你仍舊願意被毆打(如大目犍連),你還願意遭遇嚴重的死亡。五蘊(khandha)所帶來的危險實在太大。一些佛教徒想成為毘舍佉(Visākhā)或天帝釋(Sakka),這些是已證初果卻仍享受五欲者,因為他們認為自己已無墮惡趣之憂。這顯示他們仍未看見五蘊重負的過患與危險。佛陀也警告過,沒有比五蘊更危險與更有過患的東西。

若你已證初道,還是應該繼續往上攀登。

佛陀教法的精髓

一九六一年九月二十一日

佛陀會選擇哪種佛法作為他教法的精髓呢?第一個尋找心材的人來到一棵大樹旁,這棵樹挺拔且擁有心材。他砍下樹枝和樹葉,並把它們拿走,認為那是心材。第二個人砍下樹皮外層,認為那是心材。第三個人砍下樹皮內層。第四個人砍下邊材,認為那是心材。第五個人砍下心材並把它拿走了。(基於《心材譬喻經》(Majjhima Nikāya))只有當我們找到無法被摧毀的佛法精髓時,佛陀才會感到欣慰。我們必須思考,藉由五個譬喻,我們在佛陀的教法中做了哪些佛法?

如果你聽聞佛法開示只是為了功德,那就如同第一個人拿走樹枝和樹葉。這指的是所有為了好的去處(好的轉世)所做的行為。

道智是不間斷且不朽的佛法。這些才是真正的精髓——心材。戒(sīla)能帶來長壽,並帶來免於危險的果報。在佛陀的教法中,有些人只滿足於持戒(即使這樣的人也不多;看看社會上乃至國際層面的混亂和問題)。有些人修習止(samatha)並獲得一些神通,但他們對此感到滿足。佛陀並沒有稱讚他們。有些人修習止並獲得禪那的殊勝智慧(abhiñña)。在末日臨近之時,每個人都證得禪那,能夠在空中飛行,潛入地底。第五個人就像那些修習八正道並證悟道(magga)和果(phala)的人。他們是為了證得九種出世間法而修行的人:四種道智、四種果智和涅槃。其他帶有果報的修行可能會被業摧毀,並可能導致惡趣(即由於業複雜的運作,它們是不確定的)。這些是破碎的,因為它們沒有內在的精髓。

我並非在挑剔它們的錯誤。在尋找佛法的精髓時,這些並非精髓,所以我必須這樣說。如果你想尋找佛法的精髓,你必須從內觀(vipassanā)開始。如果你仍然沒有道果之智,你必須注意到:「我仍然沒有佛法的精髓。」那麼你的修行可能會破壞、消亡和消失(這是我們仍然在輪迴中的原因之一)。如果你證得了初果,那就相當穩定了。最多只剩下七次轉世(這取決於個人)。即使是一位阿羅漢,也曾被國王下令用油炸。他沒有煩惱,但由於五蘊的存在,他仍然必須受苦。(我對這個故事沒有了解)。另一個例子是摩訶目犍連(大多數佛教徒都知道的著名事件)。他被強盜毆打。

如果你仍然滿足於初果,那麼你仍然想要被毆打(像摩訶目犍連一樣)。你仍然想要以嚴重的方式死去。五蘊的危險確實非常糟糕。一些佛教徒想成為像維沙卡(女施主)和天帝釋(帝釋天,作為享受感官樂趣的入流者)那樣的人,

因為他們認為自己已免於惡趣。這表明人們仍然看不到負擔沉重的五蘊的危險 和過失。沒有比五蘊更大的危險和過失了(佛陀也曾警告)。如果你證得了初 果,最好繼續向上攀登。

The Owner of the Khandha

22nd September 1961

In samsāra, we were born (jāti), lived (pavatti), and died (maraṇa) again and again. These cycles would be uncountable. We have to search for the culprit behind these things. In this way, we can free ourselves from this vaṭṭa-dukkha – rounds of suffering. At near death, craving makes arrangements of where to take birth. Action (kamma) is the house builder. The owner who orders to make the khandha house is craving. Craving is asking the builder of kamma where to build the khandha house. It's quite sure that taṇhā is the main culprit. At the time he became Buddha, he made the exclamation to taṇhā: "Taṇhā, the builder, in the future you couldn't build the khandha house for me." This does not include action in it, so kamma is not determined by it. The khandha house has the dangers of ageing, sickness, and death. According to the D.A process, no denial is possible because of kamma-vaṭṭa and vipāka-vaṭṭa which arises. But kamma has to build the khandha house in accordance with the preference of taṇhā (i.e., in accordance with the clinging of taṇhā and kamma, which throw it down there!)

If one is clinging to family members and possessions at near death, accordingly with the clinging, one will get the type of khandha (peta-khandha). Through examination, one has to be freed from kilesa-vaṭṭa. So it's unnecessary to say to kamma that you have to leave! Therefore, the Buddha did not make kamma the cause of dukkha, but rather craving. With the cause of taṇhā-samudaya sacca, the result of khandha-dukkha sacca arises. It's more true to say that it is because of taṇhā that one encounters serious dukkha rather than because of kamma. One can't overcome taṇhā, so it has to happen. Only then do you have right view. In the ocean of saṁsāra, drifting living beings from this life to that life is taṇhā. Some people used to say "I have to suffer according to the arrangement of kamma." They're wrong. Whatever dukkha arises, it is because of taṇhā, which also includes diṭṭhi. Diṭṭhi is the great taṇhā which makes beings suffer in the four apāyas. If you are unable to destroy taṇhā, you will be drifted away by it. Even if you don't know from where you came, taṇhā is like water drifting you until you arrive at the human port (i.e., this life). Again encountering the sense objects of human life increases taṇhā.

Therefore, whatever of drifting and sinking (wholesome and unwholesome) is the power of taṇhā. Taṇhā is the drifter, and beings are graspers who grasp or cling to things blindly. From a past life, taṇhā like water drifted the being until it arrived at this life. After arriving here, what is he doing in this life? On either bank of the river, there are five trees growing at the edge. (in the Sutta, it mentions kusa grass, rushes, reeds, or trees) It's unnecessary to say that the drifting person wants to climb on the bank. The five trees on the edge of the bank refer to the five khandhas.

They were eroded by river currents and the roots were exposed (i.e., unstable and related to the anicca nature). The branches are also inclining toward the water. The drifter tries to grasp them, but they fall on him.

Beings are regarding the five khandhas (form...consciousness) by grasping/clinging to them as if they are me and mine (Sayadaw gives examples for each one of them). Therefore, whatever life you are in, you are never having free time. The Buddha in this sutta described only one's own khandhas. But you are including your family members and other khandhas as things to grasp. If there is no clinging, life will be boring for you. You have satisfaction only as a drifter and sinker. If it is like this, people can't transfer merits to you. You are searching for these things as reliance. But the Buddha said these are for sinking. Therefore, except for Dhamma, don't rely on anything. Now! You all are grasping blindly. With no insight knowledge, life will be this way. It's important to observe them as impermanence (anicca). (this talk is based on the Nadī Sutta of Khandha saṃyutta, SN 22. 93).

You have to search for the shore of Nibbāna. Don't search for grasping/clinging. With the cessation of clinging, tears will stop. You must shun away from the river -bank trees. Whatever khandha you're asking for, it will be fallen off. Therefore, in samsāra, we have missed many Buddhas (with taṇhā-upādāna). With more grasping, there will be more falling. You're grasping them to die again and again. Becoming a drifter is a little better (a bit more comfortable – i.e., merits). Isn't it too bad for a sinker? (i.e., demerits or unwholesome states). The Buddha is asking you to not grasp, cling, and pull with taṇhā, but to observe with paññā. You have to always observe them as unstable, impermanent. This lets taṇhā (kilesas) stop, and you can't drift away (i.e., staying with anicca). And then you'll arrive at the bank of magganga. Before this, you're seeing the falling off of anicca. Liberation from the drifting and sinking dhammas is only through insight practice.

Whatever dhamma you're contemplating, it is important to discern anicca. In this way, taṇhā water dries up and it's unable to drift you away. And then you're

liberated from the falling of khandha trees. This is the freedom from drifting and sinking dhammas.

《五蘊的主人》

1961年9月22日

在輪迴(saṁsāra)中,我們一再出生(jāti)、生活(pavatti)、死亡 (maraṇa),這樣的循環已是不可計數的。我們必須尋找這一切背後的主使者, 唯有如此,才能從這苦輪(vaṭṭa-dukkha)中解脫出來。

在臨終時,渴愛(taṇhā)會安排下一世的投生之處,而業(kamma)則是造屋者。命令業去建造五蘊屋的人,就是渴愛。渴愛向造屋者業下達命令,問:「在哪裡建造五蘊之屋?」很明顯,**渴愛就是主要的元兇**。

當佛陀成道時,他曾對渴愛發出感嘆:「渴愛啊,你這個造屋者,從今以後,你不能再為我造屋了!」這段話中沒有提到業,因此**並非一切都由業所主導**。 五蘊之屋具有老、病、死等危險。根據緣起法(D.A. process),這是無可否認的,因為業輪(kamma-vaṭṭa)與果輪(vipāka-vaṭṭa)會不斷生起;但**業是依照 渴愛的偏好來建造五蘊屋的**(也就是說,依據渴愛的執取,業才投擲生命到相應處所)。

若人在臨終時執著於家人或財產,那麼這種執取將導致其獲得相應的五蘊身(如餓鬼的五蘊身)。透過審觀,我們必須從煩惱輪(kilesa-vaṭṭa)中解脫出來。所以,**不必對業說「你離開我吧!」**因此,佛陀沒有將「苦」的根源歸因於業,而是歸因於「渴愛」。

由於渴愛——集諦(samudaya sacca)——的存在,才招致了五蘊之苦——苦諦(dukkha sacca)。因此,更準確地說:**因渴愛而遭受巨大苦難,比因業而受苦 更真實**。若無法戰勝渴愛,那麼這些痛苦就必然會發生。能如此知見,即為正見(sammā-diṭṭhi)。

在輪迴的海洋中,將眾生從此生漂至彼生的,就是渴愛。有些人會說:「我必須依照業的安排而受苦。」這是錯誤的說法。一切苦的發生,根源在於渴愛,其中也包括邪見(diţhi)。邪見即是強烈的渴愛,它使眾生墮入四惡趣。

如果無法摧毀渴愛,你將被它漂流牽引。即使你不知道自己從哪裡來,渴愛也像水流一樣,把你沖刷到人道(比喻為抵達「人類港口」)。然而一抵達人道,接觸到人間的咸官對象後,渴愛又會增長。

因此,一**切漂流與沉沒(善與惡)都是渴愛的力量所致**。渴愛是「漂流者」, 而眾生則是「執取者」,盲目地抓取與執著。從前世開始,渴愛就像水一般, 將眾生沖刷到這一生。那麼他在今生又做了什麼呢?

在河岸兩旁,長著五棵靠近水邊的樹。(經典中提及的是莎草、蘆葦、香蒲或 大樹)這五棵樹就象徵五蘊。樹木被河水侵蝕,根部裸露(象徵無常性),枝 幹也傾向水面。漂流者試圖抓住它們,結果卻反被壓倒。

眾生執取五蘊(色、受、想、行、識)為「我」與「我所」。(尊者為此逐一舉例說明)因此,不論投生於何處,生命中從無空閒。佛陀在本經中只描述了一個人的五蘊,但你們卻把家人與其他眾生的五蘊也納入執取範圍。若無執取,人生對你而言便索然無味;而你之所以有滿足感,是因為你是「漂流者與沉沒者」。

若是如此,他人便無法為你回向功德。你正尋找這些事物作為依靠;但佛陀說, 這些都只會讓你沉沒。因此,**除了佛法,不要依靠任何事物**。

此時,你們都是盲目執取的行者。若無觀智,生命就會如此一再循環。因此, **重要的是以觀智觀察它們為無常(anicca)**。這樣才能止息渴愛(煩惱),不 再被漂流牽引,進而到達「道支之岸」(magganga)。

在此之前,你會先看到無常的消逝。解脫於漂流與沉沒之法,唯有透過內觀修行才能實現。

無論你觀什麼法,**最重要的是辨知它的無常性**。如此,渴愛之水將乾涸,無法 再沖刷你,而你也將解脫於五蘊之樹的倒塌。這便是解脫於漂流與沉沒之法。

五蘊的主人

一九六一年九月二十二日

在輪迴(saṃsāra)中,我們一次又一次地出生(jāti)、存活(pavatti)和死亡(maraṇa)。這些循環將是數不清的。我們必須尋找這些事物背後的罪魁禍首。這樣,我們才能從這輪迴之苦(vaṭṭa-dukkha)中解脫出來。臨終之時,渴愛(taṇhā)會安排在哪裡投生。行為(kamma)是房屋的建造者。命令建造五蘊之屋的主人是渴愛。渴愛詢問業的建造者在哪裡建造五蘊之屋。可以肯定的是,渴愛是主要的罪魁禍首。在他成佛之時,他對渴愛發出了感嘆:「渴愛,建造者,未來你無法再為我建造五蘊之屋了。」這不包括行為在內,所以業並非由此決定。五蘊之屋有衰老、疾病和死亡的危險。根據緣起(D.A.)的過程,由於業輪(kamma-vaṭṭa)和果報輪(vipāka-vaṭṭa)的生起,否定是不可能的。但是業必須根據渴愛的偏好建造五蘊之屋(即根據渴愛和業的執取,它們將其拋入那裡!)。

如果一個人臨終時執著於家人和財物,那麼根據這種執著,他將得到那種五蘊(餓鬼之蘊,peta-khandha)。透過檢視,一個人必須從煩惱輪(kilesa-vaṭṭa)中解脫出來。所以不必對業說你必須離開!因此,佛陀並沒有將業視為苦的原因,而是渴愛。由於渴愛集諦(taṇhā-samudaya sacca)的原因,五蘊苦諦(khandha-dukkha sacca)的結果生起。更真實的說法是,一個人遭遇嚴重的痛苦是因為渴愛,而不是因為業。一個人無法克服渴愛,所以它必然會發生。只有那時你才會有正見。在輪迴的海洋中,將眾生從此生漂流到彼生的是渴愛。有些人過去常說:「我必須按照業的安排受苦。」他們是錯的。無論什麼痛苦生起,都是因為渴愛,其中也包括邪見(diṭṭhi)。邪見是強大的渴愛,它使眾生在四惡趣中受苦。如果你無法摧毀渴愛,你將會被它漂走。

即使你不知道你從何而來,渴愛就像水一樣漂流你,直到你到達人類的港口(即此生)。再次遇到人類生活的感官對象會增加渴愛。因此,無論是漂流還是沉沒(善或不善),都是渴愛的力量。渴愛是漂流者,而眾生是盲目抓住或執著事物的人。從前一生,像水一樣的渴愛漂流著眾生,直到它到達此生。到達這裡之後,他在這一生中做什麼呢?在河流的兩岸,邊緣生長著五棵樹。(在經中,提到的是茅草、燈心草、蘆葦或樹木)。不必說漂流的人想要爬上岸。岸邊的五棵樹指的是五蘊。它們被河水侵蝕,樹根暴露出來(即不穩定且與無常的本質相關)。樹枝也傾向水面。漂流者試圖抓住它們,但它們卻掉落在他身上。眾生透過抓住/執著五蘊(色…識),彷彿它們是我和我的(尊者舉例說明了每一個)。因此,無論你處於哪一生,你都從未有空閒時間。佛陀在

這部經中只描述了自己的五蘊。但是你卻將你的家人和其他五蘊也視為需要抓住的東西。

如果沒有執著,生活對你來說將會很無聊。你只有作為一個漂流者和沉沒者才會感到滿足。如果這樣,人們就無法將功德迴向給你。你正在尋找這些東西作為依靠。但是佛陀說這些是讓你沉沒的。因此,除了佛法,不要依賴任何事物。現在!你們都在盲目地抓住。沒有內觀智慧,生活將會是這樣。將它們視為無常(anicca)來觀察非常重要。(這次開示基於《相應部》《蘊相應》第93經《河流經》)。

你必須尋找涅槃的彼岸。不要尋找抓住/執著。隨著執著的止息,眼淚將會停止。你必須避開河岸的樹木。無論你要求什麼五蘊,它都會掉落。因此,在輪迴中,我們錯過了許多佛陀(由於渴愛-執取)。越多的抓住,就會有越多的掉落。你抓住它們是為了再次死亡。成為一個漂流者稍微好一點(稍微舒適一點——即功德)。對於一個沉沒者來說,這不是太糟糕了嗎?(即惡業或不善的狀態)。佛陀要求你不要以渴愛抓住、執著和拉扯,而是要以智慧觀察。你必須始終觀察它們是不穩定、無常的。這讓渴愛(煩惱)停止,你也不會漂走(即安住於無常)。然後你將到達道支的岸邊。在此之前,你看到的是無常的掉落。從漂流和沉沒的法中解脫出來,唯有透過內觀的修行。無論你觀照什麼法,辨識無常都很重要。這樣,渴愛之水就會乾涸,無法再漂走你。然後你就會從五蘊之樹的掉落中解脫出來。這就是從漂流和沉沒的法中獲得自由。

On the Main Road to Nibbāna

23rd September 1961

The ears listen to the Dhamma and ñāṇa has to turn around the khandhas. In this way, the knowing and the existing dhamma fit together. If you ask me, "What ñāṇa is it?" You get the yathābhūta ñāṇa. What's yathābhūta ñāṇa? There is no man nor woman, not a person, and not a being in the khandha. It only exists as anicca. If you discern these two factors, you're close to Nibbāna. Don't think about "What'll happen to me?" If you continue in this way, you will arrive at Nibbāna. People who don't get yathābhūta ñāṇa want to become human and celestial beings (devatā). If you get this ñāṇa, you will not want to become any of them. You only have the desire to arrive at Nibbāna, the cessation of dukkha.

Yathābhūta ñāṇa means "Knowing as it really is." According to the Buddha, if you end up at other people's mouths, you become like cotton wool moving around here and there. In a past life, one encountered the danger of not knowing. In this life, one ends up at other people's mouths and encounters the danger of wrong view. Only by knowing the wrong thing and knowing the benefit of the right thing does it become clear. If you still don't get the yathābhūta ñāṇa, you will always encounter the two dangers of not knowing and wrong view (from Sacca Saṃyutta).

If you correct the danger of wrong view, you will also be freed from the danger of not knowing. It refers to diṭṭhi and avijjā falling away. It's vipassanā ñāṇa — yathābhūta ñāṇa. Someone discerning anicca is free from the two dangers of not knowing and wrong view. If you discern anicca by listening to Dhamma, you are close to Nibbāna. With the continuing practice, one becomes wearisome of anicca and with the ending of it, one arrives at Nibbāna.

通往涅槃的正道

1961年9月23日

耳根聽聞佛法,然後智慧(ñāṇa)必須轉向觀照五蘊(khandha)。如此,「知」與「所存在的法」便會相契相合。如果你問我:「這是什麼樣的智慧(ñāna)?」這就是如實智(yathābhūta ñāna)。

那麼,什麼是如實智?即是於五蘊中看見「無男、無女、無人、無眾生」,它僅是無常(anicca)的現象。若你能如實地覺知這兩項(即:無我與無常),你就已經靠近涅槃了。

不要思惟:「我未來會怎麼樣呢?」只要如是地持續前行,就會抵達涅槃。未得如實智的人會渴望成為人或天(devatā)。然而,若你已獲得如實智,就不再渴望成為這些存在。你唯一的願望便是抵達涅槃——苦的止息。

如實智(yathābhūta ñāṇa)就是「如其本然地知見」。根據佛陀的教導,如果你落入他人之口(即依他人言語見解而活),你就像一團棉絮被風吹來吹去、沒有定向。在過去生中,人們曾遭遇「不知」的危險;而在此生,又落入他人之口,遭遇「邪見」的危險。

唯有「知見錯誤之事」並「知曉正法之利益」,才能顯明抉擇之處。如果你尚未得如實智,你將會常常遭遇兩種危險——無明與邪見(見於《真諦相應》(Sacca Saṃyutta))。

若你能糾正「見解錯誤」的危險,也將同時解脫於「無明」的危險。這就是邪見與無明的斷除,亦即觀智(vipassanā ñāṇa)——如實智(yathābhūta ñāṇa)。

能夠觀見無常者,即能遠離「不知」與「邪見」這兩種危險。如果你透過聽聞佛法而觀見無常,你就已經靠近涅槃了。持續修習後,會對無常生起厭離;當無常止息時,即是抵達涅槃。

通往涅槃的正道

一九六一年九月二十三日

耳朵聽聞佛法,而智慧(ñāṇa)必須迴轉觀照五蘊。這樣,了解與存在的法才能契合。如果你問我:「這是什麼智慧?」你會得到如實智(yathābhūta ñāṇa)。什麼是如實智?在五蘊中沒有男人,也沒有女人,不是人,也不是眾生。它只是以無常(anicca)的形式存在。如果你辨識這兩個因素,你就接近涅槃了。不要想「我會怎麼樣?」如果你繼續這樣下去,你將會到達涅槃。沒有獲得如實智的人想要成為人類和天人(devatā)。如果你獲得了這種智慧,你將不會想要成為他們中的任何一個。你只渴望到達涅槃,止息痛苦。

如實智的意思是「如實地知道事物本來的樣子」。根據佛陀的說法,如果你最終依賴他人的言論,你就會像到處飄動的棉絮。在前一生中,一個人遇到了不知的危險。在這一生中,一個人最終依賴他人的言論,並遇到了邪見的危險。只有了解錯誤的事物和了解正確事物的益處,事情才會變得清晰。如果你仍然沒有獲得如實智,你將總是遇到不知和邪見這兩種危險(出自《相應部·諦相應》)。

如果你糾正了邪見的危險,你也會從不知的危險中解脫出來。這指的是邪見(diṭṭhi)和無明(avijjā)的脫落。這是內觀智慧——如實智。辨識無常的人將免於不知和邪見這兩種危險。如果你透過聽聞佛法辨識無常,你就接近涅槃了。隨著持續的修行,一個人會對無常感到厭倦,隨著無常的止息,一個人就會到達涅槃。

Following the Khandha with Knowledge

28th September 1961

Dhamma practice only appears in the Buddha-sāsana, so it's very important. (even becoming a normal human being is quite difficult. Don't waste the time). In the past, most people recited anicca with their mouths and wise anicca was very rare indeed. (Most elderly people are using the rosary beads to recite it.) If you don't want to handle rosary beads, it is all right. If you follow the anicca khandha with ñāṇa, it is enough. If you practice in this way, it becomes anicca vipassanā or aniccānupassanā. There is great benefit from anicca vipassanā. You are cutting off your own dukkha (D.A process) and will arrive at Nibbāna. If you contemplate often in this way, the craving of "I want, I desire," etc. becomes thinner and thinner, and with long practice, it disappears. Taṇhā becomes thin if you develop anicca-saññā and also see it as disgusting. If you don't want nor desire anything, you will know that taṇhā is becoming thinner. This happens because you discern a lot of arising and vanishing of anicca. Ñāṇa develops slowly as disgust and disenchantment. This comes from the Aṅguttara Nikāya.

I don't want you to see anicca with your eyes. (even this, most people don't know and can't see). With ñāṇa, discerning them in the khandha is like water bubbles bursting! Discerning the minds is like water foams.

This is killing of taṇhā, upādāna, and kamma. Then birth can't arise. With the cutting off of the causes, the results are also cut. It's the ending of one's own dukkha, so you have to practice it without laziness. Before, it was your own making anicca. Now I'm showing you by asking you to discern the anicca that the Dhamma (khandha) displays to you. You contemplate it with ñāṇa as — "it's right, it's right." Taṇhā becomes thin by seeing it as disgusting. With the thinning of taṇhā, it at last ceases. By following the arising and vanishing of the khandha as it displays itself to you, you will arrive at Nibbāna. This is the result of diṭṭha-dhamma (direct seeing). In the Dhamma-guṇa, excellent qualities of Dhamma include akālika, which means giving the result without delay. Giving the result only by contemplating (developing). If you recite it, it is only samatha. With contemplation, you attain magga. With recitation, you get samādhi. By seeing dukkha, dosa thins out and knowledge of fear arises. It is fearful to get this khandha. With the thinning of dosa, bhaya-ñāṇa arises (fearfulness). It's certain that taṇhā and dosa become thinner by contemplating anicca.

If you know it as the arising and vanishing of dukkha sacca, you don't want any realm and life, and become fearful. Only with the fear of khandha will you not get it. Non-self also can't stop the arising and vanishing, which means not-self. On the khandha body, pleasure arises. You want it to stay longer, but it doesn't and disappears. By discerning anatta, taṇhā, māna, and diṭṭhi thin out. This point is mentioned by the Buddha in the Aṅguttara Nikāya. People who discern anicca are discerning all three of them (i.e., the three lakkhaṇas).

The Buddha teaches three lakkhaṇas according to three types of people. In reality, they are one. The Buddha taught them according to their past lives 'habitual formations – Vāsanā.

In reality, anicca vata saṅkhāra — all conditioned phenomena are impermanent; sabbe dhamma anatta — all dhamma are non-self; pañcupādānakkhandha dukkha — the five clinging khandhas are dukkha. You have to contemplate the five khandhas so that they are all the same. Therefore, if you contemplate anicca, it finishes the task. If dhamma shows you anicca, it becomes anicca-ñāṇa. If it shows dukkha, it becomes dukkha-ñāṇa. If it shows anatta, it becomes anatta-ñāṇa. Knowledge develops by itself and is not made by oneself. It's developed by contemplation. (Sayadaw points to two plastic cups in front of him) This side of the cup is anicca (i.e., object). This cup is contemplative ñāṇa. Combining them together becomes the knowledge of anicca. Therefore, it's not the name of contemplative knowledge. It's the name of the object of contemplation. We're following the name of the object of contemplation. It's clear.

It's not about making it happen. Knowing it accordingly with the dhamma shows its true nature. Ñāṇa takes the name of the object of contemplation. Only what the dhamma tells you is right. It's not right just by reciting. It becomes anicca and dukkha and anatta-ñāṇas respectively, based on the dhamma signs. It does not relate to ñāṇa. The nature of ñāṇa is only knowing. Therefore, if you still do not discern dhamma, do not contemplate as anicca. It becomes vipassanā ñāṇa only by what the dhamma is showing you. Do not take it from a book, which is only a record.

The practice of vipassanā is to know oneself (D.A process is about oneself). Not knowing oneself means that living beings are encountering many kinds of dukkha. This ñāṇa is made by dhamma (not by prayers). Wisdom perfection arises by contemplating dhamma.

(So Buddhism is not a blind faith. Confidence comes from direct experience without judgement and coloring. Sayadaw continues on Sakka's Questions).

The Buddha-dhamma arrives in your body. This \tilde{N} āṇa ought to become a Dhamma–cetiya. Flesh, blood, bones are like bricks and cement. If you contemplate three types of feeling with their aniccas, and papañca dies \rightarrow vitakka dies \rightarrow issa/macchariya die (see the Sakkapañha Sutta, Dīgha Nikāya, DN 21).

隨智慧觀照五蘊

1961年9月28日

佛法的修行唯有在佛教教法中才能出現,因此它極為重要。(即便轉生為一般人也非常困難,不應浪費光陰。)過去大多數人只會用口誦念「無常」,具備智慧的無常者卻極為罕見。(現今長者多拿念珠反覆誦念。)如果你不想持念珠,也沒關係。只要用智慧跟隨無常的五蘊,即已足夠。這樣修行便成為了「無常觀(anicca vipassanā)」或「無常隨觀(aniccānupassanā)」。修無常觀的利益甚大,你是在斷除自己的苦(即十二因緣的過程),並將抵達涅槃。

若你常觀此法,「我想要、我渴望」等貪求會漸次減薄,長期觀修後將會止息。若你修習無常想並視之為可厭的事物,則貪愛會變得稀薄。當你不再想要、不再渴望時,就會知道貪愛已在減弱。這正是因為你觀察了無數的生滅無常。智慧會緩慢地發展為厭離與出離,這來自《增支部經》。

我不希望你用肉眼見無常, (就連這點,多數人也做不到或看不到。)你應以智慧觀照於五蘊中,它就像水泡破裂一般!觀察心念時,它如水沫般消散。這就是斷除貪愛、執取與業,從而不再有生起。因斷除因,果也隨之止息。這是滅除自我苦的修行,所以應當不懈地修習。

過去是你自己造作無常,現在我教你觀照法(五蘊)所呈現給你的無常。你應以智慧觀察,並認可它:「是的,這是對的。」當你視之為可厭,貪愛就會逐漸減弱,最終止息。只要你持續觀照法所示現的生滅五蘊,就能抵達涅槃。這即是「現法現證」(diţṭha-dhamma)的成果。

在「法的殊勝功德」中,「不延遲」(akālika)指的是——只要你觀照,就會立即生起果報。僅僅誦念,它只是寂止禪(samatha);唯有觀照,才能生起道智。誦念能得定,觀苦則能減損瞋心,並生起怖畏之智。得到這個五蘊是極為可怖的事!瞋心變薄之時,將生起「怖畏智(bhaya-ñāṇa)」。

透過觀照無常,若你了知這是苦諦的生滅,就不再希望任何有與生命,並會生起恐懼。唯有當你對五蘊生起畏懼時,才會不再貪求它。無我也無法阻止生滅,這正是無我之意。在這身體上,樂受生起,而你想讓它停留得久些,但它終究會消失。

透過觀察「無我」,貪愛、慢心與邪見會變得稀薄。這點佛陀在《增支部》中也有提到。觀無常者,其實同時也在觀三相(無常、苦、無我)。佛陀根據三類行者,分別教授三相。事實上,它們本是一體。佛陀是根據行者過去世的串習(vāsanā)來作教導。

實際上是這樣的:

- anicca vata sankhāra 一切行皆無常;
- sabbe dhamma anatta 一切法皆無我;
- pañcupādānakkhandha dukkha 五取蘊即是苦。

你應觀照五蘊,使它們顯現為相同的本質。所以,只要你觀無常,即能完成修行任務。若法(dhamma)示現無常,便是無常智(anicca-ñāṇa);若示現苦,便是苦智;若示現無我,便是無我智。智慧是自然發展的,而非自作的,它由觀照所生。

(尊者指著面前的兩個塑膠杯)這一邊的杯子是「無常」(所緣),這杯子是「觀照智慧」(觀心)。兩者結合,即成為「無常之智」。所以,觀智的名稱是依所觀對象而得來的名稱。我們是依據所觀法的名稱而命名的,這點很清楚。

這不是強行「創造」的,而是如實知見法所展現的本質。觀智的性質只是「知」。因此,如果你尚未觀見法,不應強說那是「無常」。唯有當法向你示現時,它才會成為觀智。不要從書中取來觀想,那些只是記錄。

毘婆舍那的修行就是要了知自身(D.A 過程是關於自身的)。若不了解自己, 眾生就會遭遇各種苦。這智慧是由法所產生的,不是由願望帶來的。般若波羅 蜜的圓滿,是藉由對法的觀照而實現的。 (所以佛法並非盲信。信心來自親身體驗,不加判斷與染著。尊者接著講述帝 釋天的問答)

佛陀的教法已進入你的身體。這智慧應當成為「法塔」(Dhamma-cetiya)。血肉骨骼如磚瓦與水泥。若你觀照三受的無常、煩惱死去→ 想念死去→ …… 嫉妒與慳吝也死去(參見《帝釋問經》,長部第 21 經 Sakkapañha Sutta, DN 21)。

以智慧跟隨五蘊

一九六一年九月二十八日

佛法修行只出現在佛陀的教法(sāsana)中,所以非常重要。(即使成為一個正常的人也很困難。不要浪費時間)。過去,大多數人用嘴巴念誦無常,而以智慧了解無常則非常罕見。(大多數老年人使用念珠來念誦)。如果你不想使用念珠,那也沒關係。如果你以智慧(ñāṇa)跟隨無常的五蘊,那就足夠了。如果你以這種方式修行,它就成為無常內觀(anicca vipassanā)或無常隨觀(aniccānupassanā)。無常內觀有巨大的利益。你正在切斷你自己的痛苦(緣起過程),並將到達涅槃。如果你經常以這種方式觀照,那麼「我想要,我渴望」等等的渴愛就會越來越細微,經過長期的修行,它就會消失。如果你發展無常想(anicca-saññā)並視其為令人厭惡的,渴愛就會變得微弱。如果你不想要也不渴望任何東西,你就會知道渴愛正在變得微弱。這發生是因為你辨識了許多無常的生起和滅去。智慧隨著厭惡和厭離而緩慢發展。這出自《增支部》(Aṅguttara Nikāya)。

我不希望你用眼睛去看無常。(即使這樣,大多數人也不知道,也看不到)。 以智慧在五蘊中辨識它們,就像水泡破裂一樣!辨識心念就像水沫。這就是殺 死渴愛、執取和業。然後,出生就無法生起。隨著原因的切斷,結果也會被切 斷。這是個人痛苦的結束,所以你必須毫不懈怠地修行。以前,是你自己製造 無常。現在我正在向你展示,要求你辨識佛法(五蘊)向你展示的無常。你以 智慧觀照它——「這是對的,這是對的。」 透過視其為令人厭惡的,渴愛變得微弱。隨著渴愛的減弱,它最終會止息。透過跟隨五蘊向你展示的生起和滅去,你將會到達涅槃。這是現見法(diṭṭha-dhamma,直接看到)的結果。在佛法之德中,佛法的卓越品質包括

「akālika」,意指不延遲地給予結果。僅透過觀照(發展)就給予結果。如果你只是念誦,那只是奢摩他(samatha)。透過觀照,你證得道(magga)。透過念誦,你獲得禪定(samādhi)。透過看到苦,瞋恨(dosa)減弱,恐懼的知識生起。得到這個五蘊是可怕的。隨著瞋恨的減弱,怖畏智(bhaya-ñāṇa,恐懼感)生起。可以肯定的是,透過觀照無常,渴愛和瞋恨都會減弱。

如果你將其視為苦諦的生起和滅去,你就不會想要任何界和生命,並且會感到恐懼。只有對五蘊感到恐懼,你才不會再得到它。無我也無法阻止生起和滅去,這就是無我的意思。在五蘊身上,快樂生起。你希望它停留更久,但它不會,並且會消失。透過辨識無我,渴愛、慢(māna)和邪見(diṭṭhi)都會減弱。這一點是佛陀在《增支部》中提到的。辨識無常的人同時也在辨識所有三者(即三法印)。

佛陀根據三種不同類型的人教導三法印。實際上,它們是一體的。佛陀根據他們過去世的習性——薰習(Vāsanā)來教導他們。實際上,「諸行無常」

(anicca vata saṅkhāra)——所有有為法都是無常的;「諸法無我」(sabbe dhamma anatta)——所有法都是無我的;「五取蘊是苦」

(pañcupādānakkhandha dukkha)——五種執取的五蘊是苦。你必須觀照五蘊,使它們都相同。因此,如果你觀照無常,它就能完成任務。如果佛法向你展示無常,它就成為無常智(anicca-ñāṇa)。如果它展示苦,它就成為苦智

(dukkha-ñāṇa)。如果它展示無我,它就成為無我智(anatta-ñāṇa)。知識自行發展,並非由自己製造。它是由觀照發展而來的。(尊者指向他面前的兩個塑膠杯)杯子的這一邊是無常(即對象)。這個杯子是觀照的智慧。將它們結合在一起就成為無常的知識。因此,它不是觀照智慧的名稱。它是觀照對象的名稱。我們正在跟隨觀照對象的名稱。很清楚。

這不是關於使其發生。如實地了解佛法所展示的,才能顯現其真實本質。智慧 取決於觀照對象的名稱。只有佛法告訴你的才是正確的。僅僅念誦是不夠的。 它分別基於佛法的徵象而成為無常、苦和無我之智。這與智慧的本質無關。智 慧的本質只是知道。因此,如果你仍然沒有辨識佛法,就不要觀照為無常。只 有佛法向你展示的,它才會成為內觀智慧。不要從書本中獲取,那只是一種記 錄。 內觀的修行是了解自己(緣起過程是關於自己的)。不了解自己意味著眾生正在遭遇各種各樣的痛苦。這種智慧是由佛法產生的(不是透過祈禱)。智慧的 圓滿是透過觀照佛法而生起的。(所以佛教不是盲目的信仰。信心來自於沒有 判斷和偏見的直接經驗。尊者繼續談論釋提桓因的問題)。

佛陀的教法進入你的身體。這種智慧應該成為法塔(Dhamma-cetiya)。血肉 骨骼就像磚塊和水泥。如果你觀照三種感受及其無常,然後戲論滅→尋滅→ ……嫉妒/慳吝滅(見《長部》《釋問經》,DN 21)。

Permanent and Temporary Homes

3rd October 1961

The Buddha taught these with his deep and wide knowledge that the permanent homes of living beings are the four woeful planes. Human and celestial realms are only temporary visits (sightseeing and indulgence in pleasures). Don't be satisfied with your small good results. You have to note that these are still not worthy. From here you have to go to apāyas (for most humans today). For example, you take a pebble and throw it upward into the air. Its going upward and staying there for a moment is very short indeed, and the pebble falls to the ground again. The time of staying for a moment in the air is very insignificant compared with staying on the ground. Generally, unwholesomeness (akusala dhamma) of living beings (especially humans) is extremely muddy.

You can only kill the hellish seed of wrong views and doubts in this human world. It's very difficult to kill them in heaven and Brahma-heavens. Only in this human world do sacca dhamma and paţiccasamuppāda dhamma exist. Even these dhammas are quite rare now.

If you don't practise, what the khandha and ñāṇa know will just go to woeful existences. You have to practise very quickly, because the khandha is running toward death. The khandha process is: "Whatever you're doing, I'll go to the cemetery."

People are shamelessly making prayers for becoming (bhava) in front of the Buddha statue (later Buddhists). It's quite ugly indeed by seeing with the knowledge of knowing sacca. With wrong attention, people take dukkha sacca as sukha sacca. Wrong attention is like the soil, not knowing (avijjā) is like the seed, and affection for family members and possessions is like pouring water (taṇhā) on the soil with the seed. Therefore, the khandha of dukkha sacca tree grows out from the soil and later bears dukkha fruits, and avijjā seeds fall again on the soil. In this way, saṁsāra is revolving. Dukkha will end by planting the vijjā seed on the soil of right attention and pouring saddhā water (faith) on it.

(This is a strong samvega talk on the importance of practice to end painful births, which are permanent places for most human beings.)

永久與暫時的住處

1961年10月3日

佛陀以其深廣的智慧教導說,**眾生的永久住處是四種惡趣**(地獄、畜生、餓鬼、阿修羅)。**人界與天界只是暫時的停留**(觀光與享樂之處)。不要因為自己獲得了一些小小的善果而自滿,你必須清楚地認識到:這些仍然不夠值得。從人界出發,大多數現代人終將再度墮入惡趣。

舉例來說,你拿起一顆小石子往空中丟擲,它上升並短暫停留在空中,隨即又落回地面。它在空中的那一剎那極其短暫,與它長時間停留在地面的時間相比,幾乎微不足道。這就如同眾生在善趣的短暫停留與在惡趣中的長久滯留之對比。

一般來說,眾生(尤其是人類)所造的不善法是極其混濁、污穢的。

只有在人界,才能斬斷邪見與疑惑這兩種地獄之種。在天界與梵天界中想要斷除它們是非常困難的。**唯有人界存在真理法(sacca dhamma)與緣起法 (paţiccasamuppāda dhamma)**。即便如此,如今這些法也變得極為稀少。

若你不修行,那麼**五蘊與心識中所知的一切,只會導引你再次墮入惡趣**。你必須及早修行,因為**這具色身正在奔向死亡**。蘊身的進程就像是在對你說:「不論你正在忙些什麼,我都正往墓地而去。」

現今有些佛教徒**毫無羞恥心地在佛像前祈求未來再得有(bhava)**,這在正見者看來是極為醜陋的行為。因錯誤作意(ayoniso manasikāra),人們將**苦諦誤認為樂諦**。錯誤作意就如同泥土,無明(avijjā)就像種子,而對家庭與財產的愛著(taṇhā)則如同為種子澆水。因此,從這片土壤中,便長出**苦諦之蘊樹(dukkha-khandha)**,最終結出苦果,而無明之種子又再次播撒其中。就這樣,輪迴(saṃsāra)便無止無休地持續著。

唯有在正作意(yoniso manasikāra)的土壤上種下明智之種子(vijjā),再澆以信心之水(saddhā),才能止息苦諦,了脫生死。

(這是一篇極具「法怖畏」(samvega)力量的開示,強調修行的重要性——因為對於大多數人類而言,**痛苦的再生便是他們的「永久住處」**。)

永久與暫時的居所

一九六一年十月三日

佛陀以他深廣的智慧教導說,眾生的永久居所是四惡趣。人界和天界只是暫時的拜訪(觀光和沉溺於樂趣)。不要滿足於你微小的善果。你必須注意到,這些仍然不值得。從這裡你必須去惡趣(對於今天大多數人來說)。例如,你撿起一顆小石頭,把它向上拋到空中。它向上升起並在空中停留片刻的時間確實非常短暫,然後小石頭又會掉回地面。與停留在地面上的時間相比,在空中停留的片刻時間非常微不足道。一般來說,眾生(尤其是人類)的不善法極其污濁。

你只能在這個人世間殺死邪見和疑惑的地獄之種。在天界和梵天界很難殺死它們。只有在這個人世間才存在四聖諦(sacca dhamma)和緣起法

(paṭiccasamuppāda dhamma)。即使這些佛法現在也相當稀有。如果你不修行, 五蘊和智慧所知道的將只會導向惡趣。你必須非常快速地修行,因為五蘊正奔 向死亡。五蘊的過程是:「無論你在做什麼,我都會去墓地。」

人們不知羞恥地在佛像前祈求成為(bhava,存在)(後來的佛教徒)。以了解四聖諦的智慧來看,這確實非常醜陋。由於錯誤的注意(wrong attention),人們將苦諦(dukkha sacca)視為樂諦(sukha sacca)。錯誤的注意就像土壤,不知(無明,avijjā)就像種子,而對家人和財物的愛戀就像在有種子的土壤上澆水(渴愛,taṇhā)。因此,苦諦之樹的五蘊從土壤中長出來,後來結出苦的果實,而無明的種子又再次落在土壤上。

這樣,輪迴就在運轉。透過在正確注意的土壤上種下智慧之種(vijjā),並澆灌信心之水(saddhā),苦將會止息。

(這是一篇強烈的警策之語,強調修行的重要性,以結束痛苦的出生,而痛苦的出生是大多數人類永久的居所。)

Why Not See Nibbāna?

17th November 1961

(Starting with the six attributes of Dhamma)

Dhamma is calling at you and then it disappears. If you follow it, you will see it's not existing. What kind of not existing is there? It is from existence to not existing. At the time of calling you, it exists, but when you follow it, then it'll tell you, "I am dead. Don't follow with the hand but with ñāṇa. It'll tell you, "I am anicca. In this way, lobha, dosa, and moha do not arise. This is akāliko — now giving the result. Kilesas not arising is Nibbāna (khaṇa-nibbāna). If you are not able to follow it, saṁsāra will become long.

In reality, vipassanā dhamma is included in the six attributes of Dhamma taught by the Buddha, but we don't know it. If you are unable to follow the dhammas, you not see aniccas. Buddhists take akālika as only Nibbāna, but it's not true. The D.A process is cut off from the beginning to the end (see – the 12 links chart). It means lobha, dosa, and moha do not follow behind. You're following the deceiving dhammas (kilesas) and do not find Nibbāna. Without encountering good teachers, even if someone has perfection, it becomes fruitless (ahosi kammas) [Sayadaw gave the example of king Ajātasattu]

Even if Sāriputta had pāramīs when meeting with Sañjaya, he achieved nothing. (his first teacher or wrong teacher – pāpamitta. This point is very important for yogis who want to end dukkha. There is much evidence in suttas and modern day yogis' stories. It leads to wasting their time and perfections). Cooling down of kilesas is Nibbāna.

Therefore, when lobha, dosa, and moha do not arise, it is Nibbāna. Don't believe what other people say but believe what the khandha's is telling you. Opanayiko – the ñāṇa following aniccas will lead to Nibbāna directly. Paccattaṁ veditabbo viñnūhi – only those who are doing the practice will see and know Nibbāna.

You do it and will get it, referring to magga dhamma, phala dhamma, and Nibbāna dhamma. The Buddha used to say only one thing — it exists, is true and beneficial. So Dhamma exists, and with the right practice, one can attain the results.

為何不見涅槃?

1961年11月17日

(從佛陀所說的「法的六種殊勝特性」開始)

法(Dhamma)在呼喚你,然後它就消失了。若你去追隨它,就會發現它不再存在了。那是什麼樣的「不存在」呢?是從「存在」轉為「不存在」的狀態。在它呼喚你之時,它是存在的;當你追隨它時,它便對你說:「我死了。」不要用手去追,而是要用**智慧(ñāṇa)**去跟隨,它會告訴你:「我是無常(anicca)。」

如此一來,**貪(lobha)、瞋(dosa)、癡(moha)就不會生起**,這就是**「akāliko」(即刻見效)**的含義——當下即得其果。**煩惱不生,即是涅槃(剎那涅槃,khaṇa-nibbāna)**。如果你無法如是觀照、跟隨,那麼輪迴(saṁsāra)就會漫長無期。

事實上,內觀法(vipassanā dhamma)就包含在佛陀所教的法的六種特性之中,但我們卻不明白。若你不能跟隨這些法,就無法見到無常相(anicca)。一般佛教徒認為「akālika」只是指涅槃,其實並非如此。

當十二因緣(D.A process)從頭至尾被切斷時(請參照「十二緣起圖」),也就意味著**貪、瞋、癡不再於其後相續生起**。但如今你卻追隨那些欺騙你的法(即煩惱、kilesa),因此無法證得涅槃。若未遇到善知識,即使你有波羅蜜,也可能變成無效業(ahosi kamma)。

(尊者舉出阿闍世王的例子來說明此點。)

即使像舍利弗這樣有大波羅蜜者,若在遇見**邪師(pāpamitta)**如山遮耶時,也一無所成。

(這一點對於想要了脫苦的禪修者尤其重要,經典與現代禪修者的故事中皆有 此類證據,錯遇導師往往導致波羅蜜被浪費。)

煩惱的冷卻與止息,就是涅槃。

因此,當**貪、瞋、癡不生起時,就是涅槃。**不要去相信他人怎麽說,而應該相信**五蘊(khandha)**所告訴你的真相。

Opanayiko——以智慧(ñāṇa)跟隨無常,將會直接引領你至涅槃。 Paccattaṁ veditabbo viññūhi——唯有親身實修之智者,才能親證與體驗涅槃。

你修行,便會得果。這是指道智法(magga dhamma)、果智法(phala dhamma)與涅槃法(nibbāna dhamma)。

佛陀向來只說一件事:**「這是存在的、真實的、有利益的。」**因此,**法確實存在**,若以正確方法修行,即能證得其果報。

為何不見涅槃?

一九六一年十一月十七日

(從佛法的六種特質開始)

佛法在呼喚你,然後消失。如果你跟隨它,你會看到它並不存在。那是什麼樣的不存在呢?是從存在到不存在。在呼喚你時,它是存在的,但當你跟隨它時,它會告訴你:「我死了。不要用手,而要用智慧跟隨。它會告訴你:「我是無常的。」這樣,貪(lobha)、瞋(dosa)、癡(moha)就不會生起。這是「akāliko」——現在就給予結果。煩惱不生起就是涅槃(剎那涅槃,khaṇanibbāna)。如果你無法跟隨它,輪迴將會變得漫長。

實際上,內觀佛法包含在佛陀所教導的佛法六種特質中,但我們不知道。如果你無法跟隨諸法,你就看不到無常。佛教徒認為「akālika」只是涅槃,但這是不對的。緣起(D.A.)的過程從頭到尾都被切斷了(見十二因緣圖)。這意味著貪、瞋、癡不會隨之而來。你正在跟隨欺騙性的法(煩惱),而找不到涅槃。沒有遇到好的老師,即使有人具有波羅蜜,也會變得沒有結果(ahosi kammas)[尊者舉了阿闍世王的例子]。

即使舍利弗在遇到刪闍耶時具有波羅蜜,他也一無所獲。(他的第一位老師或錯誤的老師——惡友,pāpamitta。這一點對於想要結束痛苦的瑜伽行者非常重要。經文和現代瑜伽行者的故事中有很多證據。這會導致他們浪費時間和波羅蜜)。

煩惱的冷卻就是涅槃。因此,當貪、瞋、癡不生起時,那就是涅槃。不要相信 別人說的,而要相信五蘊告訴你的。

「Opanayiko」——跟隨無常的智慧將直接導向涅槃。「Paccattam veditabbo viññūhi」——只有那些正在修行的人才能看到和知道涅槃。

你去做,就會得到它,指的是道法(magga dhamma)、果法(phala dhamma)和涅槃法(Nibbāna dhamma)。佛陀過去常說一件事——它是存在的,是真實的,是有益的。所以佛法是存在的,透過正確的修行,一個人可以獲得結果。

Not Yours

16th March 1962

You have to know that none of the five khandhas are mine. Whatever khandha arises, you have to contemplate it in this way. You may not believe this. If you practice with faith, it is easy to succeed (without faith, you will never start the practice; with a lot of doubt, it becomes a hindrance). For example, in summer, the body is hot and in winter it's cold. These are made by temperature. While sitting, due to the pressure of the upper body and the floor beneath, the feeling or sensation of pain and aches arises. This is not made by me and you have to contemplate that this is not mine. (Sayadaw continues to give examples for the other khandhas.)

In the arising of phenomena, there is no inclusion of my effort. In the vanishing of them, there is also no inclusion of me. With the causes, it comes into being and without the causes, it vanishes. Contemplate according to the Buddha's instruction. What is the benefit of it? You are able to abandon your khandha body (especially near death). You can do it because it's not mine. This is a teaching on killing of taṇhā. It's a teaching of killing upādāna, kamma, jāti, and maraṇa. This is the teaching on the cessation of samudaya and dukkha.

Taṇhā, upādāna, and kamma are Samudaya Sacca, and jāti and maraṇa are dukkha sacca. In abandoning Samudaya Sacca, you must know dukkha sacca thoroughly. Abandon the two truths of enemies and associate with two truths of friends. Contemplation is magga. Seeing the cessation is nirodha. When you contemplate that this is not mine, the four truths arise. (This talk is based on Khandha-vagga saṃyutta.)

The Buddha gave the following example. Some people take the grasses in the Jetavana Monastery, some trample on it, and some burn it. Do the monks watching nearby waver? The monks answer – it's nothing happen to us because these do not belong to us. Therefore, contemplate on one's khandha in this way. Even a tooth or head hair are not ours! You make it yours, which become trembling.

The important point is that whatever you are thinking about to say or do, at first, you have to know it as "this is not mine." This is the way the Buddha taught to abandon the two truths which should be abandoned (Samudaya and dukkha).

不是你的

1962年3月16日

你必須明白:五**蘊中無一是「我的」。無論哪一蘊生起,都要如是觀照:「這不是我、不是我所有。」**

你或許不容易相信這一點,但若你懷有**信心來修行**,將會較容易成功。**沒有信** 心根本無法開始修行;疑心太重就會成為障礙。

舉個例子:夏天時身體覺得熱,冬天時覺得冷,這是因為**溫度的緣故**,並非由「我」所造成。當你坐著時,由於身體重量壓在地面上,就會產生**痠痛與苦受**,這同樣也不是「我」所造成的。你必須觀照這一切:「這不是我。」(尊者接著也對其他四蘊舉出類似的例子)

諸法生起之時,並不包含我的意志;它們的滅去,也不包含我在其中。

有因即生,無因即滅。

這正是佛陀所教導的觀法。

那麼,觀照這樣的法有什麼利益呢?

你將能夠捨離這個色身(尤其在臨終時),因為你觀見它「不是我的」。 這是佛陀為了斷除愛(taṇhā)所教導的法。

這是為了斷除取(upādāna)、業(kamma)、生(jāti)與死(maraṇa)而說的法。

這是止息集諦與苦諦的教導。

愛、取、業是集諦(Samudaya Sacca);

生與死是苦諦(Dukkha Sacca)。

要想斷除集諦,你就必須透徹認知苦諦。

遠離這兩個「敵對真理」,親近「兩個友善真理」——即道諦與滅諦。

觀照即是道諦(magga),

見到止息即是滅諦(nirodha)。

當你如實觀照「這不是我的」,四聖諦即在當下生起。 (本開示根據《蘊相應》(Khandha-vagga Samyutta))

佛陀曾舉出以下譬喻:

在祇樹給孤獨園裡,有人拿走草,有人踐踏它,有人燒毀它。

近旁觀看的比丘們會因此動搖嗎?

比丘們回答:「不會發生什麼,因為那些草不是我們的。」

所以,你也要這樣**觀照自己的五蘊身**。

即使是一根牙齒或一根頭髮,都不是你的!

你錯誤地執取為「我所有」,這才是導致顫抖與苦迫的原因。

最關鍵的一點是:

無論你正打算說什麼或做什麼,首先必須內心明白:「這不是我的。」 這正是佛陀教導我們**捨棄應捨二聖諦(集與苦)**的修行法門。

非你的

一九六二年三月十六日

你必須知道,五蘊都不是我的。無論什麼五蘊生起,你都必須這樣觀照它。你可能不相信這一點。如果你以信心修行,就容易成功(沒有信心,你永遠不會開始修行;充滿懷疑,它就會成為一種障礙)。例如,在夏天,身體是熱的,在冬天是冷的。這些都是由溫度造成的。坐著的時候,由於上半身的壓力以及下方的地板,疼痛和痠痛的感覺或感受就會生起。這不是我造成的,你必須觀照到這不是我的。(尊者繼續舉例說明其他的五蘊。)

在現象的生起中,沒有包含我的努力。在它們的消失中,也沒有包含我。有了因緣,它就存在;沒有了因緣,它就消失。按照佛陀的教導觀照。這樣做有什麼好處呢?你能夠捨棄你的五蘊身(尤其是在臨終時)。你可以做到,因為它不是我的。這是關於殺死渴愛(taṇhā)的教導。這是關於殺死執取

(upādāna)、業(kamma)、生(jāti)和死(maraṇa)的教導。這是關於止息集諦(samudaya)和苦諦(dukkha)的教導。

渴愛、執取和業是集諦,而生和死是苦諦。在捨棄集諦時,你必須徹底了解苦諦。捨棄兩個敵人的真理,並與兩個朋友的真理交往。觀照是道(magga)。看到止息是滅(nirodha)。當你觀照到這不是我的時候,四聖諦就會生起。(這次開示基於《相應部·蘊相應》。)

佛陀舉了以下的例子。有些人拿走祇園精舍的草,有些人踐踏它,有些人燒掉它。附近觀看的僧侶會動搖嗎?僧侶們回答說——這對我們沒有任何影響,因為這些不屬於我們。因此,要以這種方式觀照自己的五蘊。即使是一顆牙齒或一根頭髮也不是我們的!你把它們當作你的,就會產生動搖。

重要的觀點是,無論你正在思考要說什麼或做什麼,首先,你必須知道它是「這不是我的」。這是佛陀教導捨棄應該捨棄的兩個真理(集諦和苦諦)的方法。

The Oceans Never Dry

18th to 20th March 1962

Ocean means a lot of water. According to the Buddha, there are still things greater than that. There are six oceans comprising human eyes, ears, nose, etc. that exist in the khandha body. The eye-doors are never satisfied with seeing things. It never seems enough for them. They never fill up, even at death. The real ocean still can be dried up when seven suns come out (appear), but the six oceans of sense doors never dry up (see the seven suns discourse in the Aṅguttara Nikāya, Book of Sevens).

They never dry up even as lives continue on and on. These are the real oceans. "Enough with seeing and listening" never arises with human beings. They are never free from paying taxes for these holes. What are you doing every day? You are filling these things with water that can't be full. (Sayadaw gave many examples for the six sense doors in daily life. Humans should really contemplate the dangers and destruction coming from the indulgence of sensual pleasures which are lowly and momentary. The price for them is too much, even relating to human survival. See severe climate changes and pollution of the Earth).

Human stupidity is extremely strong. Even when one's own khandha ocean can't be filled, they're searching for the khandhas of family members. They are doing the tasks that will never finish (even after death).

The Buddha said that a fool is alone in filling these six oceans (from Salāyatana Saṃyutta, Samudra Sutta).

You must be able to distinguish between one's own business and the business of others. The oppressive nature of the khandha is its own matter. Your own business or matter is separated from it. Making fulfillment for the desire of the six sense doors is not one's business. If you take on the duties of the khandha, that is its business. You know the khandha as dukkha and make an effort to separate from it. This is one's own matter. The matter of becoming a slave for the khandha is its matter. The matter of struggling to be free from the khandha is one's business. Regarding the khandha, its matters are many and one's matters are little. Someone who doesn't know the Dhamma never concerns themselves with their own matters. Doing the khandha's business is samudaya and dukkha saccas. Doing one's own business is magga and nirodha saccas. The four truths are included there.

[Note: The above talk can be summarized as focusing on one's own welfare versus the welfare of the khandha. One's welfare is to end dukkha, whereas the welfare of the khandha is continuing or enlarging dukkha. From the sutta teachings and Sayadaw's talks, we know our human stupidity has no limits and is quite dangerous. It makes the readers or listeners develop strong samvega and weariness toward the world.]

The Buddha exhorts us to avoid places where we should not go. If one's body has sores and wounds, entering into the thorny wood is not good. The whole body is covered with sores, and one who has sores must shun away from thorns. If not, it increases dukkha domanassa (physical and mental pains). All the six sense doors are sores. If you open your eyes and take it as affectionate, then the lobha sore grows. Family members are thorns. Therefore, lobha, dosa, moha, etc., sores increase. Love and hate sores of lobha and dosa arise by contacting the objects of thorn. People want to go to these places and seek pleasures even though Dhamma forbids them. Whoever lacks vipassanā always has the moha sore arise. The khandha is vedanākkhandha that already has sores. He doesn't know about vedanā and also enters into the thorny wood; this patient is a crazy one.

It means he is worried about not getting dukkha that he has to enter into the thorns. The Buddha was asking – why do these things happen? According to him, it is due to not understanding restraint and having no restraint (samvara and asamvara). Therefore, people have no restraints. It happens due to a lack of restraint on sense objects and sense doors.

If you don't want this to happen, contemplate the aniccas of ārammaṇas and dvāras (objects and doors). Samvara is very important. With satipaṭṭhāna practice, you will not be pricked by thorns and no increase in sores. Without vipassanā, you are not free from sores, and they only increase. It can be called indriya-samvara or vipassanā.

海洋永不乾涸

1962年3月18日至20日

「海洋」是指水量極多的所在。但依佛陀所說,**還有比大海更為廣大的東西**存在。即是存在於**蘊身之內的六大感官海洋**——眼、耳、鼻等六根。***眼門從不對所見感到滿足,它永遠不會感到「足夠」。**即使到了臨終,也不會停止這種欲求。

世間的真實大海,在七個太陽出現時還有可能乾涸;但這六根之海,卻永無乾 涸之時。(參見《增支部》第七集有關「七個太陽」的經典)

它們在一生又一生中不斷延續、從不止息,這才是真正的海洋。

「我看夠了、我聽夠了」這種心念,在眾生身上從未出現過。

人們不斷為這些孔洞(感官)付出「稅金」,卻從未覺察。

你每天都在做什麼?你正在為這些無法填滿的感官之海注水。(尊者舉了許多關於六根門日常生活中的例子,指出人們應深思「沉溺於感官樂」所帶來的毀滅與危險——那是低劣而短暫的樂,而所付出的代價卻極其沉重,包括人類生存的危機,如地球氣候劇變與嚴重污染等。)

人的愚癡極其深重。

連自己的「蘊海」都無法填滿,還不斷追逐家人的蘊。

眾生持續在做那些**「即使死後也無法完成」的事。**

佛陀說:「**愚人終其一生都在填滿這六大海洋。**」(出自《處處相應》 (Saļāyatana Saṃyutta)之《海洋經》(Samudra Sutta))

你必須明辨:什麼是**「自己的事」,什麼是「蘊的事」**。

五蘊的壓迫性,是它自身的事;你與它是分離的。

為了滿足六根的欲望所做的一切,都是五蘊的事,而非你自己的事。

若你承擔了五蘊的事,那是你讓自己被五蘊奴役;

若你致力於**擺脫五蘊、了知五蘊為苦、努力遠離它**,那才是你自己的事。 五蘊的事多,而你自己的事很少。

不了解佛法的人,永遠無法顧及自己的事。

為五蘊服務的,是集諦與苦諦;

為自己而修的,是道諦與滅諦;

四聖諦全在其中。

**註: **這場講法可以總結為:

專注於「自己的事」與「五蘊之事」的差別。

真正屬於自己的事,是斷苦、出離;而五蘊之事,則是延續與擴展

苦。

從經典與尊者的開示可知,**人類的愚癡無邊,是極其危險的。** 這樣的法語能激起強烈的「厭離心(samvega)」與出世間智慧。

佛陀教誡我們:要避開那些**不應去的地方。**

如果你的身體滿是瘡疤,就不該進入滿是荊棘的森林。

如今我們的整個身體布滿六根之瘡,若仍往荊棘叢中走,痛苦與憂悲必然加劇。 六根都是瘡口。

若你打開雙眼,並對所見生起愛著,貪之瘡口便擴大。

家庭成員就是荊棘;因此,與之接觸即會引發貪與瞋的瘡。 人們渴望接近這些荊棘所在之處,追逐欲樂,儘管佛法已禁止。 凡是缺乏內觀智慧者,都會不斷引發癡瘡。

五蘊本身即是「受蘊」,是痛苦之本。

若不知「受」的真相,卻又投身於荊棘之林,這樣的人簡直瘋了。

這就如同**「擔憂自己沒得苦,於是自願去受苦」**的可悲行徑。

佛陀問:「為何會如此?」

答案是:因為缺乏「遮止」與「調御」(samvara)之故。

人們缺乏對感官與對境的自制力,這就是原因。

若你想避免這些瘡的擴大,應觀察所緣(ārammaṇa)與六門(dvāra)的無常相。

「遮止」(samvara) 極其重要。

若你依《念住經》(satipaṭṭhāna)來修,不會被荊棘刺傷,瘡也不會擴大。 缺乏內觀,即無法脫離瘡,瘡只會愈來愈多。

這就是所謂的「根門遮止」(indriya-samvara)與**毘婆舍那修行**(vipassanā)。

海洋永不乾涸

一九六二年三月十八日至二十日

海洋意味著大量的水。根據佛陀的說法,還有比這更浩瀚的事物。

有六個海洋包含著人體的眼睛、耳朵、鼻子等等,存在於五蘊身中。眼門永遠無法滿足於看事物。它們似乎永遠不夠,即使到了死亡也一樣。真正的大海在七個太陽出現時仍然會乾涸,但六個感官之門的海洋永遠不會乾涸(見《增支部》《七集》中的七日經)。即使生命不斷延續,它們也永遠不會乾涸。這些才是真正的海洋。「看夠了,聽夠了」的想法永遠不會在人類心中生起。他們永遠無法免除為這些孔洞繳納的「稅」。你每天都在做什麼?你正在用永遠無法填滿的水來填滿這些東西。(尊者在日常生活中舉了許多六根門頭的例子。人類真的應該觀照來自沉溺於低下且短暫的感官樂趣的危險和毀滅。它們的代價太大了,甚至關係到人類的生存。見地球嚴重的氣候變化和污染)。

人類的愚蠢極其強烈。即使自己的五蘊之海無法填滿,他們還在尋找家人的五蘊。他們正在做永遠無法完成的任務(即使死後也是如此)。佛陀說,愚人在填滿這六個海洋時是孤獨的(出自《相應部》《六處相應》《大海經》)。

你必須能夠區分自己的事和別人的事。五蘊的壓迫性本質是它自己的事。你自己的事或問題與它分離。滿足六根門頭的慾望不是你自己的事。如果你承擔了五蘊的職責,那是它的事。你知道五蘊是苦,並努力與它分離。這是你自己的事。成為五蘊奴隸的事是它的事。努力從五蘊中解脫出來是你自己的事。關於五蘊,它的事很多,而你的事很少。不了解佛法的人從不關心自己的事。做五蘊的事是集諦和苦諦。做自己的事是道諦和滅諦。四聖諦都包含在那裡。

[註:以上開示可以總結為關注自己的福祉與五蘊的福祉。自己的福祉是結束痛苦,而五蘊的福祉是持續或擴大痛苦。從經文教導和尊者的開示中,我們知道人類的愚蠢沒有止境,而且相當危險。它使讀者或聽者對世界產生強烈的厭離和厭倦。]

佛陀勸誡我們避開不該去的地方。如果一個人的身體有瘡和傷口,進入荊棘叢是不好的。全身都佈滿瘡,有瘡的人必須避開荊棘。否則,會增加身心之苦(dukkha domanassa)。所有六根門頭都是瘡。如果你睜開眼睛並將其視為愛戀,那麼貪的瘡就會增長。家人是荊棘。因此,貪、瞋、癡等等的瘡就會增加。貪和瞋的愛恨之瘡是透過接觸荊棘的對象而生起的。即使佛法禁止,人們仍然想去這些地方尋求快樂。缺乏內觀的人總是會生起癡的瘡。五蘊是已經有瘡的受蘊(vedanākkhandha)。他不了解感受,還進入荊棘叢;這個病人是個瘋子。

這意味著他擔心得不到他必須進入荊棘叢才能得到的痛苦。佛陀問——為什麼這些事情會發生?根據他的說法,這是由於不理解和沒有約束(samvara 和asamvara)。因此,人們沒有約束。這是由於缺乏對感官對象和感官之門的約束而發生的。

如果你不想讓這種情況發生,就觀照所緣(ārammaṇas)和門戶(dvāras)的無常。約束(samvara)非常重要。透過修習四念處,你將不會被荊棘刺傷,瘡也不會增加。沒有內觀,你無法擺脫瘡,它們只會增加。這可以稱為根律儀(indriya-samvara)或內觀。

On Wrong View and Doubt

24th, 25th May 1962

Viññāṇa and citta are the same. There are more wrong views on the mind than on others (body, feeling, etc.) Therefore I give you cittānupassanā for entering the stream. All the minds arise by two causes (i.e., ārammaṇas and dvāras). The cause is anicca and the result is also anicca. Not disenchanting and not desiring anicca means forever dukkha will not cease. As a shadow arises by the mirror and person, minds are like shadows. Doubt and wrong view die by knowing cause and effect with anicca. Doubt is delusion (moha). Avijjā paccaya saṅkhāra → viññāṇam. It continues the D.A process. Therefore the Buddha said that he was afraid of doubt (not knowing the truths that saṁsāra is long). If doubt falls away by listening to talk you will not go to apāyas. If you die now you will not go there. You all only contemplate as (it vanishes, it vanishes, etc). No need to analyze them as cause and effect. This duty is finished with the teacher. After it falls away with perception (saññā) I am asking you to contemplate with paññā. Falling away with saññā is with the teacher's exposition and it falls away with noting. If you die you will not go to apāyas for one life (i.e., next life). If it falls away with wisdom you will never go there (enter the stream).

Now, people are talking as it happens by itself and take it as non-self (anatta), i.e., not with one's desire or nature. In reality anatta means the cause is anatta and the result is anatta. This is the real nature of anatta. If you take it as it happens by its nature it becomes ahetuka-diṭṭhi (i.e., without any causes). The cause is dukkha and the result is also dukkha. You have to analyze the causes and effects relationship with the three universal characteristics (Sayadaw continues to talk about **the monk Sāti**. He took the view of life that life connecting and no changing was sassata-diṭṭhi (similar to the transmigration of the soul). It was something like a gemstone (e.g., ruby) that is changing hands from hands (this talk was given in Mogok).

Connections of mind processes are the connecting of samsāra. The mind processes are sending it there. If the mind processes are cut off then samsāra is cut off. It doesn't mean past lives were cut off. If the mind process is cut off and life to life connection is also cut off. If you have a long life with unwholesome minds then it's a bad long life. According to the Buddha a hundred thousand humans die and only one person takes rebirth at a good destination. So if animals die there is no need to

mention them. (If a being falls into apāyas it is very difficult to rise up again to a good destination).

(Tell the story of monk Sāti who had a wrong view). Regarding to the new birth one can give the example of a stamp and its mark on a paper. Here the mark is the result of the stamp. The stamp does not follow through into the mark. Here the stamp is the cause of the mark.

Only the quality of the stamp is included in the mark. Taking them as a cause and effect connection and diṭṭhi falls away. If taking them as having no connection between cause and effect then it becomes uccheda view, and following that there is sassata view. Merit also has two kinds – arriving at Nibbāna and not arriving there. After diṭṭhi falls away and one does merit, it gives the result of Nibbāna. Otherwise it'll not arrive there. (Note: For the proper way of doing merits, see my translation of two talks in Part 7, Perform a Dāna Properly and Dāna and the Ending of Dukkha).

The monk Sāti had not abandoned his wrong view (sassata) so the Buddha reprimanded him strongly as he was far from the path and fruit and devoid of them.

關於邪見與疑惑

1962年5月24日至25日

識(viññāṇa)與心(citta)是一樣的。人們對於心的邪見多於對其他部分(色身、受等)的邪見。因此,我指導你們修習「觀心」(cittānupassanā),以進入初果(入流)。

一切心都是由兩種因緣而生(即所緣與根門)。因是無常,果也是無常。若對 無常不生厭、不離欲,則苦將永不止息。猶如影子因鏡子與人而顯現,心亦如 影。

當你以觀察無常的方式,洞見因果關係時,疑與邪見便會止息。疑即是癡(moha)。無明緣行→行緣識,成為緣起流轉的延續。因此佛陀曾說,他畏懼疑惑(因為不知四聖諦,輪迴將漫長無邊)。

若疑惑因聽法而止息,你將不墮惡趣。即使此刻死亡,也不會下墮。你們平時只是一味地隨念:「它滅了、它滅了……」,其實無需分析因果,那是導師的工作。當邪見與疑惑透過「想」(saññā)而斷時,我會進一步請你以「慧」(paññā)來觀照。由導師的說法與學員的「隨念」斷除的,是靠「想」的層次;但若你能以智慧觀破,則永遠不會再墮入惡趣,這就是入流。

如今,有人說:「法是自然發生的、非我所能控制」,並以此理解「無我」。 這是錯的。真正的無我是:因是無我,果也是無我,這才是實相。若認為 「它是自然生起的」,這便落入「無因論邪見」(ahetuka-diṭṭhi)。實際上, 因是苦,果也是苦。你必須以三相(無常、苦、無我)來分析因果關係。

(尊者接著談到比丘沙提的故事。他主張生命從一生連續到另一生,無有改變, 這是「常見邪見」(sassata-diṭṭhi),類似「靈魂轉世」的概念。他的見解如同 寶石從一手轉至另一手,寶石不變,僅是換人持有。)

心流的相續即是輪迴的相續。若心流被斷,輪迴也被斷。這並非表示過去 世被切斷,而是說:若此生的心流被止息,則來生的連結亦被止息。若你以不 善心活著一生,那就是一場惡業漫長的生命。

根據佛陀所說,**十萬人中,只有一人能得生善趣;若是動物死去,根本無須多言。**(一旦墮入惡趣,要再升返為人,實在極為困難。)

(此處建議講述沙提比丘的故事)

**對於再生(投生)的解釋,可用印章與其印痕作比喻: **印痕是印章的結果,但印章本身並未隨之過去。這裡印章是因,印痕是果,印章的特質表現在印痕上。若理解為因果相續,邪見便會止息。若認為因果無關,則會墮入「斷見」(uccheda-diţţhi),接著又會落入「常見」(sassata-diţţhi)。

功德也有兩類:一類導向涅槃,一類不導向涅槃。若先斷邪見,所行功德可導向涅槃;否則即使行善,也不會導向解脫。

(附註:欲知如何正確地行布施,請參考第七冊中兩篇講記譯文:《正確行布施》與《布施與苦的止息》)

沙提比丘未能斷除常見,因此佛陀對他加以嚴厲斥責,指出他離道、離果,毫無證得。

論邪見與疑

一九六二年五月二十四、二十五日

識(viññāṇa)和心(citta)是相同的。關於心的邪見比關於其他(身體、感受等)的邪見更多。因此,我給予你們隨觀心(cittānupassanā)以入流。所有心念都由兩個原因生起(即所緣和根門)。原因是無常(anicca),結果也是無常。不厭離和不捨棄無常意味著痛苦永遠不會止息。如同鏡子和人產生影子一樣,心念就像影子。

透過以無常了解因果,疑和邪見就會消滅。疑是愚癡(moha)。無明緣行→行緣識。它延續了緣起(D.A.)的過程。因此,佛陀說他害怕疑(不知道輪迴漫長的真理)。如果透過聽聞開示,疑脫落了,你就不會去惡趣。如果你現在死去,你也不會去那裡。你們都只是觀照(它消失了,它消失了等等)。不需要將它們分析為因果。這個責任由老師完成。在它隨著知覺(saññā)脫落之後,我要求你們以智慧(paññā)觀照。隨著知覺脫落是透過老師的闡述,它隨著覺知而脫落。如果你死去,你在一生(即來生)中不會去惡趣。如果它隨著智慧脫落,你將永遠不會去那裡(入流)。

現在,人們說它自己發生,並認為它是無我(anatta),即不是由於個人的意願或本性。實際上,無我的意思是原因是無我,結果也是無我。這是無我的真實本性。如果你認為它自然而然地發生,它就變成了無因論(ahetuka-diṭṭhi,即沒有任何原因)。原因是苦(dukha),結果也是苦。你必須以三共相分析因果關係(尊者繼續談論沙提比丘。他認為生命連接且不變是常見(sassata-diṭṭhi,類似於靈魂的輪迴)。它有點像一顆寶石(例如紅寶石),在不同的人手中傳遞(這次開示是在莫哥給予的)。

心念過程的連接就是輪迴的連接。心念過程將其送往那裡。如果心念過程被切斷,那麼輪迴就被切斷了。這並不意味著過去世被切斷了。如果心念過程被切斷,那麼生與生的連接也被切斷了。如果你以不善的心度過漫長的一生,那將是糟糕的漫長一生。根據佛陀的說法,十萬人死亡,只有一人投生到好的去處。所以如果動物死亡,就不需要提及它們了。(如果一個眾生墮入惡趣,就很難再次升到好的去處)。

(講述沙提比丘持有邪見的故事)。關於新的出生,可以舉一個印章及其在紙上的印記的例子。這裡的印記是印章的結果。印章不會跟隨到印記中。這裡印章是印記的原因。只有印章的品質包含在印記中。將它們視為因果連接,邪見就會脫落。如果認為因果之間沒有連接,那麼它就變成了斷見,隨之而來的是常見。功德也有兩種——到達涅槃和沒有到達涅槃。在邪見脫落之後,如果行善,它會帶來涅槃的結果。否則它不會到達那裡。(註:關於正確行善的方法,請參閱我翻譯的第七部分中的兩篇開示,《正確地行布施》和《布施與苦的止息》)。

沙提比丘沒有捨棄他的邪見(常見),所以佛陀嚴厲地斥責了他,因為他遠離道果,並且沒有獲得道果。

Who Created Dukkha?

13th June 1962

Dukkha is not given by others (e.g., God, with punishments). The dhammas in the khandha are giving you dukkha. You get dukkha because you are unable to cut off the cause of dukkha in your khandha. Not knowing the right cause means that it becomes ahetuka-diṭṭhi (causeless view) (when people suffer they blame it on others. What about the doctrine of a Creator? (Could it be counted in the ahetukavāda?)

(Sayadaw continues to talk about Sammasana Sutta from Saṃyutta Nikāya.) Where is jarā and maraṇa coming from? If you want to think you must think about truth. Only by finding out the enemy who will kill you can you exterminate him. Aging comes from the five khandhas (refer to ageing and death). You have to be aged by the heat element (tejo) brought with oneself (khandha). And you must die with it. Therefore in Nibbāna there are no four great elements.

Where is the khandha coming from? It comes from making prayers with taṇhā. Prayers like: "May I become a human being, a devatā and not let me separate from my family members, etc." These are requests for death.

Don't be afraid of jar \bar{a} and maraṇa. You have to fear the culprit, taṇh \bar{a} – the prayer.

Again, where is taṇhā coming from? In this sutta it comes from affection, but in the D.A process it comes from feeling. Anyhow it falls into the khandha. The Buddha gives the example of affectionate things being like alcohol mixed with poison. Contemplate this khandha as anicca, dukkha, anatta, bhaya, etc. (impermanent, suffering, non-self, fearful). In this way, you will not drink the alcohol.

誰創造了苦?

1962年6月13日

苦(dukkha)不是他人所賜予的(例如:由神祇以懲罰方式加諸於人)。而是 五蘊中的法給予了你苦。你之所以受苦,是因為無法斷除在自己身心中生起苦 的原因。不了解正確的因,就會落入「無因論邪見」(ahetuka-diṭṭhi)。(當 人們受苦時,往往將原因歸咎於他人。那麼關於造物主的教義呢?是否也屬於 「無因論」的範疇?)

(尊者接著談到《相應部》中的《審察經》(Sammasana Sutta))

老與死從何而來?若你想思惟,應該思惟真理。唯有找到殺害你者的真正敵人,才能將其剷除。**老是從五蘊而來的**(即老與死都依於五蘊)。你必須被自己帶來的**熱元素(tejo dhātu)**所熾熟、老化,並終將因它而死去。因此,在涅槃中,**四大元素**是不存在的。

那麼,**五蘊從何而來?是從以貪愛(taṇhā)而作願求**中生起的。譬如發願說:「願我來世成為人,成為天神,願我不與親人分離……」等,這些願望,其實都是**對死亡的祈求!**

不要害怕老與死。你應該畏懼的是那個真正的罪魁——**貪愛(taṇhā)**,也就是那個祈願的心。

再者,**貪愛從何而來?在本經中,它源自「愛著」(情愛,pema);而在緣起** 法中,它則來自於「受」(vedanā)。無論如何,它終究是**落入五蘊中**的。

佛陀舉了個譬喻:**所愛之物,就像是摻了毒藥的酒。你必須以無常、苦、無我、 怖畏**等觀法,來觀照此五蘊身。如此一來,你便不會去飲這一杯「毒酒」。

誰創造了苦?

一九六二年六月十三日

苦不是由他人給予的(例如,神以懲罰的形式)。五蘊中的法正在給你苦。你得到苦是因為你無法切斷你五蘊中苦的原因。不知道正確的原因意味著它變成

了無因論(ahetuka-diṭṭhi,無原因的觀點)(當人們受苦時,他們會責怪他人。那麼創造者的教義呢?(它能算在無因論中嗎?)。

(尊者繼續談論《相應部》的《觀察經》。)老和死從何而來?如果你想思考,你必須思考真理。只有找出會殺死你的敵人,你才能消滅他。老來自於五蘊(參考老和死)。你必須被自身帶來的火大(tejo)所老化(五蘊)。你必須與它一起死去。因此,在涅槃中沒有四大元素。

五蘊從何而來?它來自於帶著渴愛(taṇhā)的祈求。例如這樣的祈求:「願我成為人,成為天人,不要讓我與我的家人分離等等。」這些都是對死亡的請求。不要害怕老和死。你必須害怕罪魁禍首——渴愛,這個祈求。

再次,渴愛從何而來?在這部經中,它來自於愛戀,但在緣起(D.A.)的過程中,它來自於感受。無論如何,它都落入五蘊之中。佛陀舉例說,愛戀的事物就像摻了毒藥的酒。觀照這個五蘊為無常、苦、無我、可怖等等。這樣,你就不會喝下那杯酒。

Nature of Stream Enterer

1st July 1962

[This is the last talk of Sayadaw in Mogok. He knew that within four months he would lay down his burdened khandha forever and have no chance to come back again. So he delivered this last talk for his lay disciples to check their practices.]

I'll talk about the nature of someone with the cessation of dukkha (i.e., the cessation of apāya khandhas). You have to practise for its cessation. (told the story of the Kosambī Sutta, Majjhima Nikāya) In dukkha sacca one of them is vipariṇāmatha – changing with perishing and nothing left behind. (the other three meanings of dukkha sacca are – pīḷanaṭṭha, saṅkhatatha and santāpatha). As an example – a feeling arises and then perishes and you can't find it anymore. If a human dies, the corpse still exists. First, you must know them in this nature. After that, ñāṇa develops into disgust and disenchantment for it. And then it develops to having no desire and not wanting it.

After that, the preceding dukkha ceases (i.e., the khandha). With the cessation, no change occurs and santi-sukha arises (peaceful happiness).

At the time of seeing the nature of change is kicca- \tilde{n} ana – functional knowledge. The cessation of the changes is kata- \tilde{n} ana – the knowledge of the ending of the truth. Then, one enters the stream and becomes a stream enterer. They have seven types of mind not the same as a worldling. The way of the practice is – sacca- \tilde{n} ana, kicca- \tilde{n} ana and kata- \tilde{n} ana respectively.

One: In sotāpanna, the four hindrances still can arise, not including doubt. If lobha or dosa arise in a worldling, it could happen the whole day, and it becomes displeasure. The one who ends dukkha does not happen in this way. If happening to him, he follows behind instantly with knowing (ñāṇa). It arises because he has still not abandoned it yet. Even though it arises for him, he instantly knows it from behind. The differences are in happening longer and shorter.

Two: Some worldlings, due to old age or encountering a lot of dukkha, find that their lobha and dosa are becoming fewer than before. This is the cause of samvega. The power of ñāṇa is another kind. Every time something arises, they can follow behind with knowledge. Not only knowing the arising dhamma but also the

mind wants to make it peaceful or calm down. With meditation, the mind arrives at the extinction of dukkha (i.e., fruition state, because path knowledge has already appeared before). At this point, for the worldling, the mind doesn't calm down and even becomes worse than before.

Three: He has no doubt about the existence of noble beings in this Buddha Sāsana. But worldlings believe that in other faiths there also can be noble beings (ariyas).

[Note: Some Chinese Buddhists believe that the saints in other faiths (i.e., God-centered) are equal to the Buddha. Therefore, sekha and asekha noble beings are lower than the Prophets who lived with wives and children.]

For a sotāpanna, he has no doubt that in other faiths there are no ariyas and no way to transcend Dukkha. His saddhā is unshakable and cannot be destroyed. (For example, see the story of the leper upāsaka Suppabuddha, Dhammapada stories, Bālavagga, Dhp. 066.)

Four: If the sotāpanna is a monk and breaks a minor rule, he'll instantly make a confession for it. If he is a layman, he'll instantly ask for forgiveness or use meditation to overcome it.

Five: He is secure in sīla. He has the desire to help people but without breaking the sīla. The Buddha gives the example of a mother cow eating grass while constantly watching her calf.

Six: He is able to concentrate and listen to sacca dhamma without letting his mind flicker outward. The Buddha gives the example of a small child who, if he handles hot charcoal unknowingly, will instantly let it go. In the same way, not letting the mind go out and instantly able to concentrate on the Dhamma.

Seven: After listening to sacca dhamma, his joy and gladness last longer, and he has a strong appreciation.

入流者的本質

1962年7月1日

(莫哥尊者於莫哥的最後一場開示)

【這是莫哥尊者在莫哥的最後一次開示。他知道自己在四個月內將永遠放下這 負擔沉重的五蘊,並且再無機會回來。因此,他對在家弟子開示這最後一講, 讓他們檢查自身的修行進展。】

我要談的是「斷除苦的人的本質」(即斷除惡趣五蘊的人的本質)。你們應當修行以達致其止息。(尊者講述《高僧鬥爭經》(Kosambī Sutta,中部)中的故事。)在苦諦中,有一項意涵是 vipariṇāmatha——即變壞、敗壞、無餘地消失。(苦諦的另外三個意涵為:壓迫性(pīlanaṭṭha)、因緣生(saṅkhatatha)與熱惱性(santāpatha)。)

舉例而言:一個「受」生起後就消失,且你再也找不到它。若一個人死了,屍體尚可存在。然而這裡所指的「受」消失後卻無跡可尋。你首先須如實地知道這種性質。接著,觀智會發展出厭離與離欲,然後再發展為無欲無求。

在這之後,先前的苦(即五蘊)止息。當止息發生時,不再有變化,稱為**寂靜樂(santi-sukha)**現起。

當你見到「變壞」的本質時,是功能智(kicca-ñāṇa)。當見到其止息時,則是成就智(kata-ñāṇa)——也就是對真諦止息的知見。此時即證入入流果,成為入流者(sotāpanna)。入流者具有七種與凡夫不同的心。修行的道途依序是:真諦智(sacca-ñāṇa)、功能智(kicca-ñāṇa)、成就智(kata-ñāṇa)。

一、人流者仍可能生起四種蓋障,但不包括疑。若一個凡夫生起貪或瞋,一整天都可能陷溺其中而不能自拔。然入流者若生起煩惱,他會即刻以觀智「跟隨觀照」。煩惱生起,是因他尚未完全斷除它;但即使生起,他也能即時覺知。兩者的差異在於煩惱持續時間的長短。

二、有些凡夫因年老或經歷許多苦難,使得貪瞋減弱,這可稱為無常激發的驚懼(samvega)。但觀智的力量是另一層次。入流者無論何時煩惱生起,都能以智即刻追隨,不僅知其生起,心中也自然想令其止息或寂靜。此時即證得果

定(phala-samāpatti),因其道智已曾現起。凡夫即使觀察煩惱,心不但無法平息,反而更加劇烈。

三、人流者不再懷疑佛教中確實有聖者存在。而凡夫則認為其他宗教中也可能有聖者(ariya)。

【註:部分華人佛教徒相信他教中的聖人(如先知、神僕)等同於佛陀,因此 認為佛弟子中的學聖與無學聖比不上娶妻生子的先知。】

對入流者而言,深信**他教中無法超越苦**、無聖者,這份信仰堅定不移、不可動搖。(例如《法句經·愚品》第66 偈中提到的麻風病優婆塞 Suppabuddha 的故事。)

四、若入流者是比丘,即使犯了微小戒條,也會立即懺悔;若是居士,則會馬上請求寬恕或以禪修克服它。

五、他對戒行具備安全感。雖然想幫助他人,但絕不破戒。佛陀舉母牛吃草時目光不離小牛為例,形容入流者即使行動,也常警覺自護。

六、他能專心聆聽真理之法(sacca dhamma),不令心向外散亂。佛陀舉例說,如小孩若手中不小心拿到火炭,會立即丟棄。同樣地,入流者聽法時不讓心跑出去,能立即專注於法上。

七、聽聞真理法後,他的法喜與歡喜持續較久,並對法有深刻的欣賞與感恩。

入流者的本質

一九六二年七月一日

[這是尊者在莫哥的最後一次開示。他知道在四個月內,他將永遠放下他沉重的 五蘊,再也沒有機會回來。所以他為他的在家弟子做了這最後一次開示,以檢 查他們的修行。]

我將談論一個苦已止息(即惡趣五蘊止息)的人的本質。你們必須為它的止息而修行。(講述《中部尼柯耶》《拘睒彌經》的故事)在苦諦中,其中之一是變異性(vipariṇāmatha)——隨著壞滅而改變,什麼也不留下。(苦諦的其他三個意義是——逼迫性(pīlanaṭṭḥa)、有為性(saṅkhatatha)和熱惱性(santāpatha))。例如——一個感受生起,然後壞滅,你再也找不到它了。如果一個人死了,屍體仍然存在。首先,你必須了解它們的這種本質。之後,智慧(ñāṇa)會發展出對它的厭惡和厭離。然後它會發展到沒有慾望和不想要它。之後,先說的苦止自了(即五額)。隨蓋止自,不更發生變化,容輕的快樂

之後,先前的苦止息了(即五蘊)。隨著止息,不再發生變化,寂靜的快樂(santi-sukha)生起。在看到變化本質的時刻是作用智(kicca-ñāṇa)——功能性的知識。變化的止息是已作智(kata-ñāṇa)——真理終結的知識。然後,一個人進入聖流,成為入流者。他們有七種與凡夫不同的心。修行的途徑是——諦智(sacca-ñāṇa)、作用智和已作智。

- 一:在入流者(sotāpanna)身上,四種障礙仍然可能生起,但不包括疑。如果 貪或瞋在凡夫身上生起,可能會持續一整天,並變成不悅。在結束痛苦的人身 上,不會發生這種情況。如果發生在他身上,他會立即以智慧(ñāṇa)跟隨其 後。它生起是因為他仍然沒有捨棄它。即使它在他身上生起,他也會立即從後 面知道它。不同之處在於持續時間的長短。
- 二:一些凡夫,由於年老或遭遇許多痛苦,發現他們的貪和瞋比以前少了。這是厭離(samvega)的原因。智慧的力量是另一種。每次有事物生起,他們都能以智慧跟隨其後。不僅知道生起的法,而且心也想要使其平靜或冷靜下來。透過禪修,心會到達痛苦的止息(即果位,因為道智先前已經出現)。在這個時候,對於凡夫來說,心不會平靜下來,甚至比以前更糟。
- 三:他對這個佛陀教法中聖者的存在沒有任何懷疑。但凡夫相信,在其他信仰中也可能有聖者(ariyas)。[註:一些中國佛教徒認為,其他信仰(即以神為中心)中的聖人與佛陀平等。因此,有學和無學的聖者比那些與妻子兒女同住

的先知更低。] 對於入流者來說,他毫不懷疑其他信仰中沒有聖者,也沒有超越痛苦的方法。他的信心(saddhā)是不可動搖且無法摧毀的。(例如,見《法句經故事》《愚者品》中麻風病優婆塞蘇帕布達的故事,Dhp. 066。)

四:如果入流者是比丘,並且犯了輕微的戒律,他會立即懺悔。如果他是居士,他會立即請求寬恕或使用禪修來克服它。

五:他在戒律上是穩固的。他渴望幫助他人,但不會破壞戒律。佛陀舉了一個 母牛吃草時不斷看著小牛的例子。

六:他能夠專注並聽聞四聖諦,不會讓他的心向外散亂。佛陀舉了一個小孩子如果不知情地拿起熱炭,會立即放手的例子。同樣地,不讓心向外散亂,並立即能夠專注於佛法。

七:聽聞四聖諦後,他的喜悅和快樂持續更久,並且他有強烈的讚賞。